# THE INTERPOLATION THEORY OF RADIAL BASIS FUNCTIONS 

by<br>Bradley John Charles Baxter<br>of<br>Trinity College

A dissertation presented in fulfilment of the requirements for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy, Cambridge University

August 1992

# THE INTERPOLATION THEORY OF RADIAL BASIS FUNCTIONS 

B. J. C. Baxter

## Summary

The problem of interpolating functions of $d$ real variables $(d>1)$ occurs naturally in many areas of applied mathematics and the sciences. Radial basis function methods can provide interpolants to function values given at irregularly positioned points for any value of $d$. Further, these interpolants are often excellent approximations to the underlying function, even when the number of interpolation points is small.

In this dissertation we begin with the existence theory of radial basis function interpolants. It is first shown that, when the radial basis function is a $p$-norm and $1<p<2$, interpolation is always possible when the points are all different and there are at least two of them. Our approach extends the analysis of the case $p=2$ devised in the 1930s by Schoenberg. We then show that interpolation is not always possible when $p>2$. Specifically, for every $p>2$, we construct a set of different points in some $\mathcal{R}^{d}$ for which the interpolation matrix is singular. This construction seems to have no precursor in the literature.

The greater part of this work investigates the sensitivity of radial basis function interpolants to changes in the function values at the interpolation points. This study was motivated by the observation that large condition numbers occur in some practical calculations. Our early results show that it is possible to recast the work of Ball, Narcowich and Ward in the language of distributional Fourier transforms in an elegant way. We then use this language to study the interpolation matrices generated by subsets of regular grids. In particular, we are able to extend the classical theory of Toeplitz operators to calculate sharp bounds on the spectra of such matrices. Moreover, we also describe some joint work with Charles Micchelli in which we use the theory of Pólya frequency functions to continue this work, as well as shedding new light on some of our earlier results.

Applying our understanding of these spectra, we construct preconditioners for the conjugate gradient solution of the interpolation equations. The preconditioned conjugate gradient algorithm was first suggested for this problem by Dyn, Levin and Rippa in 1983, who were motivated by the variational theory of the thin plate spline. In contrast, our approach is intimately connected to the theory of Toeplitz forms. Our main result is that the number of steps required to achieve solution of the linear system to within a required tolerance can be independent of the number of interpolation points. In other words, the number of floating point operations needed for a regular grid is proportional to the cost of a matrix-vector multiplication. The Toeplitz structure allows us to use fast Fourier transform techniques, which implies that the total number of operations is a multiple of $n \log n$, where $n$ is the number of interpolation points.

Finally, we use some of our methods to study the behaviour of the multiquadric when its shape parameter increases to infinity. We find a surprising link with the sinus cardinalis or sinc function of Whittaker. Consequently, it can be highly useful to use a large shape parameter when approximating band-limited functions.

## Declaration

In this dissertation, all of the work is my own with the exception of Chapter 5, which contains some results of my collaboration with Dr Charles Micchelli of the IBM Research Center, Yorktown Heights, New York, USA. This collaboration was approved by the Board of Graduate Studies.

No part of this thesis has been submitted for a degree elsewhere. However, the contents of several chapters have appeared, or are to appear, in journals. In particular, we refer the reader to Baxter (1991a, b, c) and Baxter (1992a, b). Furthermore, Chapter 2 formed a Smith's Prize essay in an earlier incarnation.

## Preface

It is a pleasure to acknowledge the support I have received during my doctoral research.

First, I must record my gratitude to Professor Michael Powell for his support, patience and understanding whilst supervising my studies. His enthusiasm, insight, precision, and distrust for gratuitous abstraction have enormously influenced my development as a mathematician. In spite of his many commitments he has always been generous with his time. In particular, I am certain that the great care he has exhibited when reading my work will be of lasting benefit; there could be no better training for the preparation and refereeing of technical papers.

The Numerical Analysis Group of the University of Cambridge has provided an excellent milieu for research, but I am especially grateful to Arieh Iserles, whose encouragement and breadth of mathematical knowledge have been of great help to me. In particular, it was Arieh who introduced me to the beautiful theory of Toeplitz operators.

Several institutions have supported me financially. The Science and Engineering Research Council and A.E.R.E. Harwell provided me with a CASE Research Studentship during my first three years. At this point, I must thank Nick Gould for his help at Harwell. Subsequently I have been aided by Barrodale Computing Limited, the Amoco Research Company, Trinity College, Cambridge, and the endowment of the John Humphrey Plummer Chair in Applied Numerical Analysis, for which I am once more indebted to Professor Powell. Furthermore, these institutions and the Department of Applied Mathematics and Theoretical Physics, have enabled me to attend conferences and enjoy the opportunity to work with colleagues abroad. I would also like to thank David Broomhead, Alfred Cavaretta, Nira Dyn, David Levin, Charles Micchelli, John Scales and Joe Ward, who have invited and sponsored my visits, and have invariably provided hospitality and kindness.

There are many unmentioned people to whom I owe thanks. Certainly this work would not have been possible without the help of my friends and family. In
particular, I thank my partner, Glennis Starling, and my father. I am unable to thank my mother, who died during the last weeks of this work, and I have felt this loss keenly. This dissertation is dedicated to the memories of both my mother and my grandfather, Charles S. Wilkins.

## Table of Contents

Chapter 1: Introduction
1.1 Polynomial interpolation ..... page 3
1.2 Tensor product methods ..... page 4
1.3 Multivariate splines ..... page 4
1.4 Finite element methods ..... page 5
1.5 Radial basis functions ..... page 6
1.6 Contents of the thesis ..... page 10
1.7 Notation ..... page 12
Chapter 2: Conditionally positive definite functions and p-norm distance matrices
2.1 Introduction ..... page 14
2.2 Almost negative matrices ..... page 15
2.3 Applications ..... page 18
2.4 The case $p>2$ page 25
Chapter 3: Norm estimates for distance matrices
3.1 Introduction ..... page 31
3.2 The univariate case for the Euclidean norm ..... page 31
3.3 The multivariate case for the Euclidean norm ..... page 35
3.4 Fourier transforms and Bessel transforms ..... page 37
3.5 The least upper bound for subsets of a grid ..... page 40
Chapter 4 : Norm estimates for Toeplitz distance matrices I
4.1 Introduction ..... page 42
4.2 Toeplitz forms and Theta functions ..... page 44
4.3 Conditionally negative definite functions of order 1 ..... page 50
4.4 Applications ..... page 58
4.5 A stability estimate ..... page 62
4.6 Scaling the infinite grid ..... page 65
Appendix ..... page 68
Chapter 5: Norm estimates for Toeplitz distance matrices II
5.1 Introduction ..... page 70
5.2 Preliminary facts ..... page 71
5.3 Pólya frequency functions ..... page 80
5.4 Lower bounds on eigenvalues ..... page 88
5.5 Total positivity and the Gaussian cardinal function ..... page 92
Chapter 6 : Norm estimates and preconditioned conjugate gradients
6.1 Introduction ..... page 95
6.2 The Gaussian ..... page 96
6.3 The multiquadric ..... page 102
Chapter 7: On the asymptotic cardinal function for the multiquadric
7.1 Introduction ..... page 118
7.2 Some properties of the multiquadric ..... page 119
7.3 Multiquadrics and entire functions of exponential type $\pi$ ..... page 121
7.4 Discussion ..... page 125
Chapter 8 : Conclusions ..... page 126
References ..... page 128

## 1 : Introduction

The multivariate interpolation problem occurs frequently in many branches of science and engineering. Typically, we are given a discrete set $I$ in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$, where $d$ is greater than one, and real numbers $\left\{f_{i}\right\}_{i \in I}$. Our task is to construct a continuous or sufficiently differentiable function $s: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
s(i)=f_{i}, \quad i \in I \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

and we say that $s$ interpolates the data $\left\{\left(i, f_{i}\right): i \in I\right\}$. Interpolants can be highly useful. For example, we may need to approximate a function whose values are known only at the interpolation points, that is we are ignorant of its behaviour outside $I$. Alternatively, the underlying function might be far too expensive to evaluate at a large number of points, in which case the aim is to choose an interpolant which is cheap to compute. We can then use our interpolant in other algorithms in order to, for example, calculate approximations to extremal values of the original function. Another application is data-compression, where the size of our initial data $\left\{\left(i, f_{i}\right): i \in \hat{I}\right\}$ exceeds the storage capacity of available computer hardware. In this case, we can choose a subset $I$ of $\hat{I}$ and use the corresponding data to construct an interpolant with which we estimate the remaining values. It is important to note that in general $I$ will consist of scattered points, that is its elements can be irregularly positioned. Thus algorithms that apply to arbitrary distributions of points are necessary. Such algorithms exist and are well understood in the univariate case (see, for instance, Powell (1981)), but many difficulties intrude when $d$ is bigger than one.

There are many applications of multivariate interpolation, but we prefer to treat a particular application in some detail rather than provide a list. Therefore we consider the following interesting example of Barrodale et al (1991).

When a time-dependent system is under observation, it is often necessary to relate pictures of the system taken at different times. For example, when measuring the growth of a tumour in a patient, we must expect many changes to occur between successive X-ray photographs, such as the position of the patient
or the amount of fluid in the body's tissues. If we can identify corresponding points on the two photographs, such as parts of the bone structure or intersections of particular veins, then these pairs of points can be viewed as the data for two interpolation problems. Specifically, let $\left(x_{j}, y_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$ be the coordinates of the points in one picture, and let the corresponding points in the second picture be $\left(\xi_{j}, \eta_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$. We need functions $s_{x}: \mathcal{R}^{2} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ and $s_{y}: \mathcal{R}^{2} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
s_{x}\left(x_{j}, y_{j}\right)=\xi_{j} \text { and } s_{y}\left(x_{j}, y_{j}\right)=\eta_{j} \text { for } j=1, \ldots, n \tag{1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore we see that the scattered data interpolation problem arises quite naturally as an attempt to approximate the non-linear coordinate transformation mapping one picture into the next.

It is important to understand that interpolation is not always desirable. For example, our data may be corrupted by measurement errors, in which case there is no good reason to choose an approximation which satisfies the interpolation equations, but we do want to construct an approximation which is close to the function values in some sense. One option is to choose our function $s: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ from some family (usually a linear space) of functions so as to minimize a certain functional $G$, such as

$$
\begin{equation*}
G(s-f)=\sum_{i \in I}\left[f_{i}-s(i)\right]^{2}, \tag{1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is the familiar least-squares fitting problem. Of course this can require the solution of a nonlinearly constrained optimization problem, depending on the family of functions and the functional $G$. Another alternative to interpolation takes $s$ to be the sum of decaying functions, each centred at a point in $I$ and taking the function value at that point. Such an approximation is usually called a quasi-interpolant, reflecting the requirement that it should resemble the interpolant in some suitable way. These methods are of both practical and theoretical importance, but we emphasize that this dissertation is restricted to interpolation, specifically interpolation using radial basis functions, for which we refer the reader to Section 1.5 and the later chapters of the dissertation.

We now briefly describe some other multivariate approximation schemes. Of course, our treatment does not provide a thorough overview of the field, for which we refer the reader to de Boor (1987), Franke (1987) or Hayes (1987). However, it is interesting to contrast radial basis functions with some of the other methods. In fact, the memoir of Franke (1982) is dedicated to this purpose; it contains careful numerical experiments using some thirty methods, including radial basis functions, and provides an excellent reason for their theoretical study: they obtain excellent accuracy when interpolating scattered data. Indeed, Franke found them to excel in this sense when compared to the other tested methods, thus providing an excellent reason for their theoretical study.

### 1.1 Polynomial interpolation

Let $P$ be a linear space of polynomials in $d$ real variables spanned by $\left(p_{i}\right)_{i \in I}$, where $I$ is the discrete subset of $\mathcal{R}^{d}$ discussed at the beginning of the introduction. Then an interpolant $s: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
s(x)=\sum_{i \in I} c_{i} p_{i}(x), \quad x \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

exists if and only if the matrix $\left(p_{i}(j)\right)_{i, j \in I}$ is invertible. We see that this property depends on the geometry of the centres when $d>1$, which is a significant difficulty. One solution is to choose a particular geometry. As an example we describe the tensor product approach on a "tartan grid". Specifically, let $I=\left\{\left(x_{j}, y_{k}\right): 1 \leq j \leq l, 1 \leq k \leq m\right\}$, where $x_{1}<\cdots<x_{l}$ and $y_{1}<\cdots<y_{m}$ are given real numbers, and let $\left\{f_{\left(x_{j}, y_{k}\right)}: 1 \leq j \leq l, 1 \leq k \leq m\right\}$ be the function values at these centres. We let $\left(L_{j}^{1}\right)_{j=1}^{l}$ and $\left(L_{k}^{2}\right)_{k=1}^{m}$ be the usual univariate Lagrange interpolating polynomials associated with the numbers $\left(x_{j}\right)_{1}^{l}$ and $\left(y_{k}\right)_{1}^{m}$ respectively and define our interpolant $s: \mathcal{R}^{2} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ by the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
s(x, y)=\sum_{j=1}^{l} \sum_{k=1}^{m} f_{\left(x_{j}, y_{k}\right)} L_{j}^{1}(x) L_{k}^{2}(y), \quad(x, y) \in \mathcal{R}^{2} \tag{1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Clearly this approach extends to any number of dimensions $d$.

### 1.2 Tensor product methods

The tensor product scheme for tartan grids described in the previous section is not restricted to polynomials. Using the same notation as before, we replace $\left(L_{j}^{1}\right)_{j=1}^{l}$ and $\left(L_{k}^{2}\right)_{k=1}^{m}$ by univariate functions $\left(P_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{l}$ and $\left(Q_{k}\right)_{k=1}^{m}$ respectively. Our interpolant takes the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
s(x, y)=\sum_{j=1}^{l} \sum_{k=1}^{m} y_{j k} P_{j}(x) Q_{k}(y), \quad(x, y) \in \mathcal{R}^{2}, \tag{1.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

from which we obtain the coefficients $\left(y_{j k}\right)$. By adding points outside the interval $\left[x_{1}, x_{l}\right]$ and $\left[y_{1}, y_{m}\right]$ we can choose $\left(P_{j}\right)$ and $\left(Q_{k}\right)$ to be univariate B-splines. In this case the linear systems involved are invertible and banded, so that the number of operations and the storage required are both multiples of the total number of points in the tartan grid. Such methods are extremely important for the subtabulation of functions on regular grids, and clearly the scheme exists for any number of dimensions $d$. A useful survey is the book of Light and Cheney (1986)

### 1.3 Multivariate Splines

Generalizing some of the properties of univariate splines to a multivariate setting has been an idée fixe of approximation theory. Thus the name "spline" is overused, being applied to almost any extension of univariate spline theory. In this section we briefly consider box splines. These are compactly supported piecewise polynomial functions which extend Schoenberg's characterization of the $B$-spline $B\left(\cdot ; t_{0}, \ldots, t_{k}\right)$ with arbitrary knots $t_{0}, \ldots, t_{k}$ as the "shadow" of a $k$-dimensional simplex (Schoenberg (1973), Theorem 1, Lecture 1). Specifically, the box spline $B(\cdot ; A)$ associated with the $d \times n$ matrix $A$ is the distibution defined by

$$
B(\cdot ; A): C_{0}^{\infty}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}: \varphi \mapsto \int_{[-1 / 2,1 / 2]^{n}} \varphi(A x) d x
$$

where $C_{0}^{\infty}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right)$ is the vector subspace of $C^{\infty}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right)$ whose elements vanish at infinity. If we let $a_{1}, \ldots, a_{n} \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$ be the columns of $A$, then the Fourier transform of the
box spline is given by

$$
\hat{B}(\xi ; A)=\prod_{j=1}^{n} \operatorname{sinc} \xi^{T} a_{j}, \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d}
$$

where $\operatorname{sinc}(x)=\sin (x / 2) /(x / 2)$. We see that a simple example of a box spline is a tensor product of univariate B -splines. It can be shown that there exist box splines with smaller supports than tensor product B-splines.

A large body of mathematics now exists, and a suitable comprehensive review is the long paper of Dahmen and Micchelli (1983). Further, this theory is also yielding useful results in the study of wavelets (see Chui (1992)). However, there are many computational difficulties. At present, box spline software is not available from the main providers of scientific computation packages.

### 1.4 Finite element methods

Finite element methods can provide extremely flexible piecewise polynomial spaces for approximation and scattered data interpolation. When $d=2$ we first choose a triangulation of the points. Then a polynomial is constructed on each triangle, possibly using function values and partial derivative values at other points in addition to the vertices of the triangulation. This is a non-trivial problem, since we usually require some global differentiability properties, that is the polynomials must fit together in a suitably smooth way. Further, the partial derivatives are frequently unknown, and these methods can be highly sensitive to the accuracy of their estimates (Franke (1982)).

Much recent research has been directed towards the choice of triangulation. The Delaunay triangulation (Lawson (1977)) is often recommended, but some work of Dyn, Levin and Rippa (1986) indicates that greater accuracy can be achieved using data-dependent triangulations, that is triangulations whose component triangles reflect the geometry of the function in some way. Finally, the complexity of constructing triangulations in higher dimensions effectively limits these methods to two and three dimensional problems.

### 1.5 Radial basis functions

A radial basis function approximation takes the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
s(x)=\sum_{i \in I} y_{i} \varphi(\|x-i\|), \quad x \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ is a fixed univariate function and the coefficients $\left(y_{i}\right)_{i \in I}$ are real numbers. We do not place any restriction on the norm $\|\cdot\|$ at this point, although we note that the Euclidean norm is the most common choice. Therefore our approximation $s$ is a linear combination of translates of a fixed function $x \mapsto \varphi(\|x\|)$ which is "radially symmetric" with respect to the given norm, in the sense that it clearly possesses the symmetries of the unit ball. We shall often say that the points $\left(x_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$ are the centres of the radial basis function interpolant. Moreover, it is usual to refer to $\varphi$ as the radial basis function, if the norm is understood.

If $I$ is a finite set, say $I=\left(x_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$, the interpolation conditions provide the linear system

$$
\begin{equation*}
A y=f \tag{1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
A=\left(\varphi\left(\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\|\right)\right)_{j, k=1}^{n} \tag{1.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

$y=\left(y_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$ and $f=\left(f_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$.
One of the most attractive features of radial basis function methods is the fact that a unique interpolant is often guaranteed under rather mild conditions on the centres. In several important cases, the only restrictions are that there are at least two centres and they are all distinct, which are as simple as one could wish. However, one important exception to this statement is the thin plate spline introduced by Duchon (1975, 1976), where we choose $\varphi(r)=r^{2} \log r$. It is easy to see that the interpolation matrix $A$ given by (1.10) can be singular for non-trivial sets of distinct centres. For example, choosing $x_{2}, \ldots, x_{n}$ to be any different points on the sphere of unit radius whose centre is $x_{1}$, we conclude that the first row and column of $A$ consist entirely of zeros. Of course, such examples
exist for any function $\varphi$ with more than one zero. Fortunately, it can be shown that it is suitable to add a polynomial of degree $m \geq 1$ to the definition of $s$ if the centres are unisolvent, which means that the zero polynomial is the only polynomial of degree $m$ which vanishes at every centre (see, for instance, Powell (1992)). The extra degrees of freedom are usually taken up by moment conditions on the coefficients $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$. Specifically, we have the equations

$$
\begin{align*}
\sum_{k=1}^{n} y_{k} \varphi\left(\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\|\right)+P\left(x_{j}\right)=f_{j}, & j=1,2, \ldots, n \\
\sum_{k=1}^{n} y_{k} p\left(x_{k}\right)=0 & \text { for every } p \in \Pi_{m}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right), \tag{1.11}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\Pi_{m}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right)$ denotes the vector space of polynomials in $d$ real variables of total degree $m$, and the theory guarantees the existence of a unique vector $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$ and a unique polynomial $P \in \Pi_{m}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right)$ satisfying (1.11). Moreover, because (1.8) does not reproduce polynomials when $I$ is a finite set, it is sometimes useful to augment $s$ in this way.

In fact Duchon derived (1.11) as the solution to a variational problem when $d=2$ : he proved that the function $s$ given by (1.11) minimizes the integral

$$
\int_{\mathcal{R}^{2}}\left[s_{x_{1} x_{1}}\right]^{2}+2\left[s_{x_{1} x_{2}}\right]^{2}+\left[s_{x_{2} x_{2}}\right]^{2} d x
$$

where $m=1$ and $s$ satisfies some differentiability conditions. Duchon's treatment is somewhat abstract, using sophisticated distribution theory techniques, but a detailed alternative may be found in Powell (1992). We do not study the thin plate spline in this dissertation, although many of our results are highly relevant to its behaviour.

In his comparison of multivariate approximation methods, Franke (1982) considered several radial basis functions including the thin plate spline. Therefore we briefly consider some of these functions.

## The multiquadric

Here we choose $\varphi(r)=\left(r^{2}+c^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}$, where $c$ is a real constant. The interpolation matrix $A$ is invertible provided only that the points are all different and there are
at least two of them. Further, this matrix has an important spectral property: it is almost negative definite; we refer the reader to Section 2 for details.

Franke found that this radial basis function provided the most accurate interpolation surfaces of all the methods tried for interpolation in two dimensions. His centres were mildly irregular in the sense that the range of distances between centres was not so large that the average distance became useless. He found that the method worked best when $c$ was chosen to be close to this average distance. It is still true to say that we do not know how to choose $c$ for a general function. Buhmann and Dyn (1991) derived error estimates which indicated that a large value of $c$ should provide excellent accuracy. This was borne out by some calculations and an analysis of Powell (1991) in the case when the centres formed a regular grid in one dimension. Specifically, he found that the uniform norm of the error in interpolating $f(x)=x^{2}$ on the integer grid decreased by a factor of $10^{3}$ when $c$ increased by one; see Table 6 of Powell (1991) for these stunning results. In Chapter 7 of this thesis we are able to show that the interpolants converge uniformly as $c \rightarrow \infty$ if the underlying function is square-integrable and band-limited, that is its Fourier transform is supported by the interval $[-\pi, \pi]^{d}$. Thus, for many functions, it would seem to be useful to choose a large value of $c$. Unfortunately, if the centres form a finite regular grid, then we find that the smallest eigenvalue of the distance decreases exponentially to zero as $c$ tends to infinity. Indeed, the reader is encouraged to consider Table 4.1, where we find that the smallest eigenvalue decreases by a factor of about 20 when $c$ is increased by one and the spacing of the regular grid is unity.

We do not consider the polynomial reproduction properties of the multiquadric discovered by Buhmann (1990) in this dissertation, but we do make use of some of his work, in particular his formula for the cardinal function's Fourier transform (see Chapter 7). However, we cannot resist mentioning one of the brilliant results of Buhmann, in particular the beautiful and surprising result that the degree of polynomials reproduced by interpolation on an infinite regular grid actually increases with the dimension. The work of Jackson (1988) is also highly
relevant here.

## The Gaussian

There are many reasons to advise users to avoid the Gaussian $\varphi(r)=\exp \left(-c r^{2}\right)$. Franke (1982) found that it is very sensitive to the choice of parameter $c$, as we might expect. Further, it cannot even reproduce constants when interpolating function values given on an infinite regular grid (see Buhmann (1990)). Thus its potential for practical computer calculations seems to be small. However, it possesses many properties which continue to win admirers in spite of these problems. In particular, it seems that users are seduced by its smoothness and rapid decay. Moreover the Gaussian interpolation matrix (1.10) is positive definite if the centres are distinct, as well as being suited to iterative techniques. I suspect that this state of affairs will continue until good software is made available for radial basis functions such as the multiquadric. Therefore I wish to emphasize that this thesis addresses some properties of the Gaussian because of its theoretical importance rather than for any use in applications.

In a sense it is true to say that the Gaussian generates all of the radial basis functions considered in this thesis. Here we are thinking of the Schoenberg characterization theorems for conditionally negative definite functions of order zero and order one. These theorems and related results occur many times in this dissertation.

## The inverse multiquadric

Here we choose $\varphi(r)=\left(r^{2}+c^{2}\right)^{-1 / 2}$. Again, Franke (1982) found that this radial basis function can provide excellent approximations, even when the number of centres is small. As for the multiquadric, there is no good choice of $c$ known at present. However, the work presented in Chapter 7 does extend to this function (although this analysis is not presented here), so that sometimes a large value of $c$ can be useful.

## The thin plate spline

We have hardly touched on this highly important function, even though the works
of Franke (1982) and Buhmann (1990) indicate its importance is two dimensions (and, more generally, in even dimensional spaces). However, we aim to generalize the norm estimate material of Chapters 3-5 to this function in future. There is no numerical evidence to indicate that this ambition is unfounded, and the preconditioning technique of Chapter 6 works equally well when applied to this function. Therefore we are optimistic that these properties will be understood more thoroughly in the near future.

### 1.6 Contents of the thesis

Like Gaul, this thesis falls naturally into three parts, namely Chapter 2, Chapters 3-6, and Chapter 7. In Chapter 2 we study and extend the work of Schoenberg and Micchelli on the nonsingularity of interpolation matrices. One of our main discoveries is that it is sometimes possible to prove nonsingularity when the norm is non-Euclidean. Specifically, we prove that the interpolation matrix is non-singular if we choose a $p$-norm for $1<p<2$ and if the centres are different and there are at least two of them. This complements the work of Dyn, Light and Cheney (1991) which investigates the case when $p=1$. They find that a necessary and sufficient condition for nonsingularity when $d=2$ is that the points should not form the vertices of a closed path, which is a closed polygonal curve consisting of alternately horizontal and vertical arcs. For example, the 1-norm interpolation matrix generated by the vertices of any rectangle is singular. Therefore it may be useful that we can avoid these difficulties by using a $p$-norm for some $p \in$ $(1,2)$. However, the situation is rather different when $p>2$. This is probably the most original contribution of this section, since it makes use of a device that seems to have no precursor in the literature and is wholly independent of the Schoenberg-Micchelli corpus. We find that, if both $p$ and the dimension $d$ exceed two, then it is possible to construct sets of distinct points which generate a singular interpolation matrix. It is interesting to relate that these sets were suggested by numerical experiment, and the author is grateful to M. J. D. Powell for the use of his TOLMIN optimization software.

The second part of this dissertation is dedicated to the study of the spectra of interpolation matrices. Thus, having studied the nonsingularity (or otherwise) of certain interpolation matrices, we begin to quantify. This study was initiated by the beautiful papers of Ball (1989), and Narcowich and Ward (1990, 1991), which provided some spectral bounds for several functions, including the multiquadric. Our main findings are that it is possible to use Fourier transform methods to address these questions, and that, if the centres form a subset of a regular grid, then it is possible to provide a sharp upper bound on the norm of the inverse of the interpolation matrix. Further, we are able to understand the distribution of all the eigenvalues using some work of Grenander and Szegő (1984). This work comprises Chapters 3 and 4. In the latter section, it turns out that everything depends on an infinite product expansion for a Theta function of Jacobi type. This connection with classical complex analysis still excites the author, and this excitement was shared by Charles Micchelli. Our collaboration, which forms Chapter 5, explores a property of Pólya frequency functions which generalizes the product formula mentioned above. Furthermore, Chapter 5 contains several results which attack the norm estimate problem of Chapter 4 using a slightly different approach. We find that we can remove some of the assumptions required at the expense of a little more abstraction. This work is still in progress, and we cannot yet say anything about the approximation properties of our suggested class of functions. We have included this work because we think it is interesting and, perhaps more importantly, new mathematics is frequently open-ended.

Chapters 6 and 7 apply the work of previous chapters. In Chapter 6 we use our study of Toeplitz forms in Chapter 4 to suggest a preconditioner for the conjugate gradient solution of the interpolation equations, and the results are excellent, although they only apply to finite regular grids. Of course it is our hope to extend this work to arbitrary point sets in future. We remark that our approach is rather different from the variational heuristic of Dyn, Levin and Rippa (1986), which concentrated on preconditioners for thin plate splines in two dimensions. Probably our most important practical finding is that the number of iterations required
to attain a solution to within a particular tolerance seems to be independent of the number of centres.

Next, Chapter 7 is unique in that it is the only chapter of this thesis which concerns itself with the approximation power of radial basis function spaces. Specifically, we investigate the behaviour of interpolation on an infinite regular grid using a multiquadric $\varphi(r)=\left(r^{2}+c^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}$ when the parameter $c$ tends to infinity. We find an interesting connection with the classical theory of the Whittaker cardinal spline: the Fourier transform of the cardinal (or fundamental) function of interpolation converges (in the $L^{2}$ norm) to the characteristic function of the cube $[-\pi, \pi]^{d}$. This enables us to show that the interpolants to certain band-limited functions converge uniformly to the underlying function when $c$ tends to infinity.

An aside Finally, we cannot resist the following excursion into the theory of conic sections, whose only purpose is to lure the casual reader. Let $S$ and $S^{\prime}$ be different points in $\mathcal{R}^{2}$ and let $f: \mathcal{R}^{2} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be the function defined by

$$
f(x)=\|x-S\|+\left\|x-S^{\prime}\right\|, \quad x \in \mathcal{R}^{2}
$$

where $\|\cdot\|$ is the Euclidean norm. Thus the contours of $f$ constitute the set of all ellipses whose focal points are $S$ and $S^{\prime}$. By direct calculation we obtain the expression

$$
\nabla f(x)=\left(\frac{x-S}{\|x-S\|}\right)+\left(\frac{x-S^{\prime}}{\left\|x-S^{\prime}\right\|}\right)
$$

which implies the relations

$$
\left(\frac{x-S}{\|x-S\|}\right)^{T} \nabla f(x)=1+\left(\frac{x-S}{\|x-S\|}\right)^{T}\left(\frac{x-S^{\prime}}{\left\|x-S^{\prime}\right\|}\right)=\left(\frac{x-S^{\prime}}{\left\|x-S^{\prime}\right\|}\right)^{T} \nabla f(x),
$$

whose geometric interpretation is the reflector property of the ellipse. A similar derivation exists for the hyperbola.

### 1.7 Notation

We have tried to use standard notation throughout this thesis with a few exceptions. Usually we denote a finite sequence of points in $d$-dimensional real space
$\mathcal{R}^{d}$ by subscripted variables, for example $\left(x_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$. However we have avoided this usage when coordinates of points occur. Thus Chapters 2 and 5 use superscripted variables, such as $\left(x^{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$, and coordinates are then indicated by subscripts. For example, $x_{k}^{j}$ denotes the $k$ th coordinate of the $j$ th vector of a sequence of vectors $\left(x^{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$. The inner product of two vectors $x$ and $y$ is denoted $x y$ in the context of a Fourier transform, but we have used the more traditional linear algebra form $x^{T} y$ in Chapter 6 and in a few other places. We have used no special notation for vectors, and we hope that no ambiguity arises thereby.

Given any absolutely integrable function $f: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$, we define its Fourier transform by the equation

$$
\hat{f}(\xi)=\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}} f(x) \exp (-i x \xi) d x, \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d}
$$

We also use this normalization when discussing distributional Fourier transforms. Thus, if it is permissible to invert the Fourier transform, then the integral takes the form

$$
f(x)=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}} \hat{f}(\xi) \exp (i x \xi) d \xi, \quad x \in \mathcal{R}^{d}
$$

The norm symbol $(\|\cdot\|)$ will usually denote the Euclidean norm, but this is not so in Chapter 1. Here the Euclidean norm is denoted by $|\cdot|$ to distinguish it from other norm symbols.

Finally, the reader will find that the term "radial basis function" can often mean the univariate function $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ and the multivariate function $\mathcal{R}^{d} \ni$ $x \mapsto \varphi(\|x\|)$. This abuse of notation was inherited from the literature and seems to have become quite standard. However, such potential for ambiguity is bad. It is perhaps unusual for the author of a dissertation to deride his own notation, but it is hoped that the reader will not perpetuate this terminology.

# 2: Conditionally positive functions and p-norm distance matrices 

### 2.1. Introduction

The real multivariate interpolation problem is as follows. Given distinct points $x^{1}, \ldots, x^{n} \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$ and real scalars $f_{1}, \ldots, f_{n}$, we wish to construct a continuous function $s: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ for which

$$
s\left(x^{i}\right)=f_{i}, \quad \text { for } i=1, \ldots, n
$$

The radial basis function approach is to choose a function $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow[0, \infty)$ and a norm $\|\cdot\|$ on $\mathcal{R}^{d}$ and then let $s$ take the form

$$
s(x)=\sum_{i=1}^{n} \lambda_{i} \varphi\left(\left\|x-x^{i}\right\|\right) .
$$

Thus $s$ is chosen to be an element of the vector space spanned by the functions $\xi \mapsto \varphi\left(\left\|\xi-x^{i}\right\|\right)$, for $i=1, \ldots, n$. The interpolation conditions then define a linear system $A \lambda=f$, where $A \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$ is given by

$$
A_{i j}=\varphi\left(\left\|x^{i}-x^{j}\right\|\right), \quad \text { for } 1 \leq i, j \leq n,
$$

and where $\lambda=\left(\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{n}\right)$ and $f=\left(f_{1}, \ldots, f_{n}\right)$. In this thesis, a matrix such as $A$ will be called a distance matrix.

Usually $\|\cdot\|$ is chosen to be the Euclidean norm, and in this case Micchelli (1986) has shown the distance matrix generated by distinct points to be invertible for several useful choices of $\varphi$. In this chapter, we investigate the invertibility of the distance matrix when $\|\cdot\|$ is a $p$-norm for $1<p<\infty, p \neq 2$, and $\varphi(t)=t$, the identity. We find that $p$-norms do indeed provide invertible distance matrices given distinct points, for $1<p \leq 2$. Of course, $p=2$ is the Euclidean case mentioned above and is not included here. Now Dyn, Light and Cheney (1991) have shown that the 1 -norm distance matrix may be singular on quite innocuous sets of distinct points, so that it might be useful to approximate $\|\cdot\|_{1}$ by $\|\cdot\|_{p}$ for
some $p \in(1,2]$. This work comprises section 2.3. The framework of the proof is very much that of Micchelli (1986).

For every $p>2$, we find that distance matrices can be singular on certain sets of distinct points, which we construct. We find that the higher the dimension of the underlying vector space for the points $x^{1}, \ldots, x^{n}$, the smaller the least $p$ for which there exists a singular $p$-norm.

### 2.2. Almost negative matrices

Almost every matrix considered in this section will induce a non-positive form on a certain hyperplane in $\mathcal{R}^{n}$. Accordingly, we first define this ubiquitous subspace and fix notation.

Definition 2.2.1. For any positive integer $n$, let

$$
Z_{n}=\left\{y \in \mathcal{R}^{n}: \sum_{i=1}^{n} y_{i}=0\right\} .
$$

Thus $Z_{n}$ is a hyperplane in $\mathcal{R}^{n}$. We note that $Z_{1}=\{0\}$.
Definition 2.2.2. We shall call $A \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$ almost negative definite (AND) if $A$ is symmetric and

$$
y^{T} A y \leq 0, \quad \text { whenever } y \in Z_{n}
$$

Furthermore, if this inequality is strict for all non-zero $y \in Z_{n}$, then we shall call A strictly AND.

Proposition 2.2.3. Let $A \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$ be strictly $A N D$ with non-negative trace. Then

$$
(-1)^{n-1} \operatorname{det} A>0 .
$$

Proof. We remark that there are no strictly AND $1 \times 1$ matrices, and hence $n \geq 2$. Thus $A$ is a symmetric matrix inducing a negative-definite form on a subspace of dimension $n-1>0$, so that $A$ has at least $n-1$ negative eigenvalues. But trace $A \geq 0$, and the remaining eigenvalue must therefore be positive.

Micchelli (1986) has shown that both $A_{i j}=\left|x^{i}-x^{j}\right|$ and $A_{i j}=\left(1+\left|x^{i}-x^{j}\right|^{2}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}$ are AND, where here and subsequently $|\cdot|$ denotes the Euclidean norm. In fact, if the points $x^{1}, \ldots, x^{n}$ are distinct and $n \geq 2$, then these matrices are strictly AND. Thus the Euclidean and multiquadric interpolation matrices generated by distinct points satisfy the conditions for proposition 2.2.3.

Much of the work of this chapter rests on the following characterization of AND matrices with all diagonal entries zero. This theorem is stated and used to good effect by Micchelli (1986), who omits much of the proof and refers us to Schoenberg (1935). Because of its extensive use we include a proof for the convenience of the reader. The derivation follows the same lines as that of Schoenberg (1935).

Theorem 2.2.4. Let $A \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$ have all diagonal entries zero. Then $A$ is $A N D$ if and only if there exist $n$ vectors $y^{1}, \ldots, y^{n} \in \mathcal{R}^{n}$ for which

$$
A_{i j}=\left|y^{i}-y^{j}\right|^{2} .
$$

Proof. Suppose $A_{i j}=\left|y^{i}-y^{j}\right|^{2}$ for vectors $y^{1}, \ldots, y^{n} \in \mathcal{R}^{n}$. Then $A$ is symmetric and the following calculation completes the proof that $A$ is AND. Given any $z \in$ $Z_{n}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
z^{T} A z & =\sum_{i, j=1}^{n} z_{i} z_{j}\left|y^{i}-y^{j}\right|^{2} \\
& =\sum_{i, j=1}^{n} z_{i} z_{j}\left(\left|y^{i}\right|^{2}+\left|y^{j}\right|^{2}-2\left(y^{i}\right)^{T}\left(y^{j}\right)\right) \\
& =-2 \sum_{i, j=1}^{n} z_{i} z_{j}\left(y^{i}\right)^{T}\left(y^{j}\right) \quad \text { since the coordinates of } z \text { sum to zero }, \\
& =-2\left|\sum_{i=1}^{n} z_{i} y^{i}\right|^{2} \leq 0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

This part of the proof is given in Micchelli (1986). The converse requires two lemmata.

Lemma 2.2.5. Let $B \in \mathcal{R}^{k \times k}$ be a symmetric non-negative definite matrix. Then we can find $\xi^{1}, \ldots, \xi^{k} \in \mathcal{R}^{k}$ such that

$$
B_{i j}=\left|\xi^{i}\right|^{2}+\left|\xi^{j}\right|^{2}-\left|\xi^{i}-\xi^{j}\right|^{2} .
$$

Proof. Since $B$ is symmetric and non-negative definite, we have $B=P^{T} P$, for some $P \in \mathcal{R}^{k \times k}$. Let $p^{1}, \ldots, p^{k}$ be the columns of $P$. Thus

$$
B_{i j}=\left(p^{i}\right)^{T}\left(p^{j}\right) .
$$

Now

$$
\left|p^{i}-p^{j}\right|^{2}=\left|p^{i}\right|^{2}+\left|p^{j}\right|^{2}-2\left(p^{i}\right)^{T}\left(p^{j}\right) .
$$

Hence

$$
B_{i j}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\left|p^{i}\right|^{2}+\left|p^{j}\right|^{2}-\left|p^{i}-p^{j}\right|^{2}\right) .
$$

All that remains is to define $\xi^{i}=p^{i} / \sqrt{ } 2$, for $i=1, \ldots, k$.

Lemma 2.2.6. Let $A \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$. Let $e^{1}, \ldots, e^{n}$ denote the standard basis for $\mathcal{R}^{n}$, and define

$$
\begin{aligned}
f^{i} & =e^{n}-e^{i}, \text { for } i=1, \ldots, n-1, \\
f^{n} & =e^{n}
\end{aligned}
$$

Finally, let $F \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$ be the matrix with columns $f^{1}, \ldots, f^{n}$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(-F^{T} A F\right)_{i j}=A_{i n}+A_{n j}-A_{i j}-A_{n n}, \quad \text { for } 1 \leq i, j \leq n-1, \\
& \left(-F^{T} A F\right)_{i n}=A_{i n}-A_{n n}, \\
& \left(-F^{T} A F\right)_{n i}=A_{n i}-A_{n n}, \quad \text { for } 1 \leq i \leq n-1, \\
& \left(-F^{T} A F\right)_{n n}=-A_{n n} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Proof. We simply calculate $\left(-F^{T} A F\right)_{i j} \equiv-\left(f^{i}\right)^{T} A\left(f^{j}\right)$.

We now return to the proof of Theorem 2.2.4: Let $A \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$ be AND with all diagonal entries zero. Lemma 2.2.6 provides a convenient basis from which to view the action of $A$. Indeed, if we set $B=-F^{T} A F$, as in Lemma 2.2.6, we see that the principal submatrix of order $n-1$ is non-negative definite, since
$f^{1}, \ldots, f^{n-1}$ form a basis for $Z_{n}$. Now we appeal to Lemma 2.2.5, obtaining $\xi^{1}, \ldots, \xi^{n-1} \in \mathcal{R}^{n-1}$ such that

$$
B_{i j}=\left|\xi^{i}\right|^{2}+\left|\xi^{j}\right|^{2}-\left|\xi^{i}-\xi^{j}\right|^{2}, \text { for } 1 \leq i, j \leq n-1,
$$

while Lemma 2.2.6 gives

$$
B_{i j}=A_{i n}+A_{j n}-A_{i j} .
$$

Setting $i=j$ and recalling that $A_{i i}=0$, we find

$$
A_{\text {in }}=\left|\xi^{i}\right|^{2}, \quad \text { for } 1 \leq i \leq n-1
$$

and thus we obtain

$$
A_{i j}=\left|\xi^{i}-\xi^{j}\right|^{2}, \quad \text { for } 1 \leq i, j \leq n-1 .
$$

Now define $\xi^{n}=0$. Thus $A_{i j}=\left|\xi^{i}-\xi^{j}\right|^{2}$, for $1 \leq i, j \leq n$, where $\xi^{1}, \ldots, \xi^{n} \in \mathcal{R}^{n-1}$. We may of course embed $\mathcal{R}^{n-1}$ in $\mathcal{R}^{n}$. More formally, let $\iota: \mathcal{R}^{n-1} \hookrightarrow \mathcal{R}^{n}$ be the map $\iota:\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-1}\right) \mapsto\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-1}, 0\right)$, and, for $i=1, \ldots, n$, define $y^{i}=\iota\left(\xi^{i}\right)$. Thus $y^{1}, \ldots, y^{n} \in \mathcal{R}^{n}$ and

$$
A_{i j}=\left|y^{i}-y^{j}\right|^{2} .
$$

The proof is complete.

Of course, the fact that $y^{n}=0$ by this construction is of no import; we may take any translate of the $n$ vectors $y^{1}, \ldots, y^{n}$ if we wish.

### 2.3. Applications

In this section we introduce a class of functions inducing AND matrices and then use our characterization Theorem 2.2.4 to prove a simple, but rather useful, theorem on composition within this class. We illustrate these ideas in examples 2.3.3-2.3.5. The remainder of the section then uses Theorems 2.2.4 and 2.3.2 to deduce results concerning powers of the Euclidean norm. This enables us to derive the promised $p$-norm result in Theorem 2.3.11.

Definition 2.3.1. We shall call $f:[0, \infty) \rightarrow[0, \infty)$ a conditionally negative definite function of order 1 (CND1) if, for any positive integers $n$ and $d$, and for any points $x^{1}, \ldots, x^{n} \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$, the matrix $A \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$ defined by

$$
A_{i j}=f\left(\left|x^{i}-x^{j}\right|^{2}\right), \text { for } 1 \leq i, j \leq n,
$$

is AND. Furthermore, we shall call $f$ strictly $C N D 1$ if the matrix $A$ is strictly AND whenever $n \geq 2$ and the points $x^{1}, \ldots, x^{n}$ are distinct.

This terminology follows that of Micchelli (1986), Definition 2.3.1 . We see that the matrix $A$ of the previous definition satisfies the conditions of proposition 2.2.3 if $f$ is strictly CND1, $n \geq 2$ and the points $x^{1}, \ldots, x^{n}$ are distinct.

## Theorem 2.3.2.

(1) Suppose that $f$ and $g$ are CND1 functions and that $f(0)=0$. Then $g \circ f$ is also a CND1 function. Indeed, if $g$ is strictly CND1 and $f$ vanishes only at 0 , then $g \circ f$ is strictly CND1.
(2) Let $A$ be an AND matrix with all diagonal entries zero. Let $g$ be a CND1 function. Then the matrix defined by

$$
B_{i j}=g\left(A_{i j}\right), \text { for } 1 \leq i, j \leq n,
$$

is $A N D$. Moreover, if $n \geq 2$ and no off-diagonal elements of $A$ vanish, then $B$ is strictly $A N D$ whenever $g$ is strictly $A N$.

Proof.
(1) The matrix $A_{i j}=f\left(\left|x^{i}-x^{j}\right|^{2}\right)$ is an AND matrix with all diagonal entries zero. Hence, by Theorem 2.2.4, we can find $n$ vectors $y^{1}, \ldots, y^{n} \in \mathcal{R}^{n}$ such that

$$
f\left(\left|x^{i}-x^{j}\right|^{2}\right)=\left|y^{i}-y^{j}\right|^{2} .
$$

But g is a CND1 function, and so the matrix $B \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$ defined by

$$
B_{i j}=g\left(\left|y^{i}-y^{j}\right|^{2}\right)=g \circ f\left(\left|x^{i}-x^{j}\right|^{2}\right),
$$

is also an AND matrix. Thus $g \circ f$ is a CND1 function. The condition that $f$ vanishes only at 0 allows us to deduce that $y^{i} \neq y^{j}$, whenever $i \neq j$. Thus $B$ is strictly AND if $g$ is strictly CND1.
(2) We observe that $A$ satisfies the hypotheses of Theorem 2.2.4. We may therefore write $A_{i j}=\left|y^{i}-y^{j}\right|^{2}$, and thus $B$ is AND because $g$ is CND1. Now, if $A_{i j} \neq 0$ if $i \neq j$, then the vectors $y^{1}, \ldots, y^{n}$ are distinct, so that $B$ is strictly AND if $g$ is strictly CND1.

For the next two examples only, we shall need the following concepts. Let us call a function $g:[0, \infty) \rightarrow[0, \infty)$ positive definite if, for any positive integers $n$ and $d$, and for any points $x^{1}, \ldots, x^{n} \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$, the matrix $A \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$ defined by

$$
A_{i j}=g\left(\left|x^{i}-x^{j}\right|^{2}\right), \text { for } 1 \leq i, j \leq n,
$$

is non-negative definite. Furthermore, we shall call $g$ strictly positive definite if the matrix $A$ is positive definite whenever the points $x^{1}, \ldots, x^{n}$ are distinct. We reiterate that these last two definitions are needed only for examples 2.3.3 and 2.3.4.

Example 2.3.3. A Euclidean distance matrix $A$ is AND, indeed strictly so given distinct points. This was proved by Schoenberg (1938) and rediscovered by Micchelli (1986). Schoenberg also proved the stronger result that the matrix

$$
A_{i j}=\left|x^{i}-x^{j}\right|^{\alpha}, \text { for } 1 \leq i, j \leq n,
$$

is strictly AND given distinct points $x^{1}, \ldots, x^{n} \in \mathcal{R}^{d}, n \geq 2$ and $0<\alpha<2$. We shall derive this fact using Micchelli's methods in Corollary 2.3.7 below, but we shall use the result here to illustrate Theorem 2.3.2. We see that, by Theorem 2.2.4, there exist $n$ vectors $y^{1}, \ldots, y^{n} \in \mathcal{R}^{n}$ such that

$$
A_{i j} \equiv\left|x^{i}-x^{j}\right|^{\alpha}=\left|y^{i}-y^{j}\right|^{2} .
$$

The vectors $y^{1}, \ldots, y^{n}$ must be distinct whenever the points $x^{1}, \ldots, x^{n} \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$ are distinct, since $A_{i j} \neq 0$ whenever $i \neq j$.

Now let $g$ denote any strictly positive definite function. Define $B \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$ by

$$
B_{i j} \equiv g\left(A_{i j}\right)
$$

Thus

$$
g\left(\left|x^{i}-x^{j}\right|^{\alpha}\right)=g\left(\left|y^{i}-y^{j}\right|^{2}\right) .
$$

Since we have shown that the vectors $y^{1}, \ldots, y^{n}$ are distinct, the matrix $B$ is therefore positive definite.

For example, the function $g(t)=\exp (-t)$ is a strictly positive definite function. For an elementary proof of this fact, see Micchelli (1986), p. 15 . Thus the matrix whose elements are

$$
B_{i j}=\exp \left(-\left|x^{i}-x^{j}\right|^{\alpha}\right), 1 \leq i, j \leq n,
$$

is always (i) non-negative definite, and (ii) positive definite whenever the points $x^{1}, \ldots, x^{n}$ are distinct

Example 2.3.4. This will be our first example using a $p$-norm with $p \neq 2$. Suppose we are given distinct points $x^{1}, \ldots, x^{n} \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$. Let us define $A \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$ by

$$
A_{i j}=\left\|x^{i}-x^{j}\right\|_{1} .
$$

Furthermore, for $k=1, \ldots, d$, let $A^{(k)} \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$ be given by

$$
A_{i j}^{(k)}=\left|x_{k}^{i}-x_{k}^{j}\right|,
$$

recalling that $x_{k}^{i}$ denotes the $k^{t h}$ coordinate of the point $x^{i}$.
We now remark that $A=\sum_{i=1}^{d} A^{(k)}$. But every $A^{(k)}$ is a Euclidean distance matrix, and so every $A^{(k)}$ is AND. Consequently $A$, being the sum of AND matrices, is itself AND. Now $A$ has all diagonal entries zero. Thus, by Theorem 2.2.4, we can construct $n$ vectors $y^{1}, \ldots, y^{n} \in \mathcal{R}^{n}$ such that

$$
A_{i j} \equiv\left\|x^{i}-x^{j}\right\|_{1}=\left|y^{i}-y^{j}\right|^{2} .
$$

As in the preceding example, whenever the points $x^{1}, \ldots, x^{n}$ are distinct, so too are the vectors $y^{1}, \ldots, y^{n}$.

This does not mean that $A$ is non-singular. Indeed, Dyn, Light and Cheney (1991) observe that the 1-norm distance matrix is singular for the distinct points $\{(0,0),(1,0),(1,1),(0,1)\}$.

Now let $g$ be any strictly positive definite function. Define $B \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$ by

$$
B_{i j}=g\left(A_{i j}\right)=g\left(\left\|x^{i}-x^{j}\right\|_{1}\right)=g\left(\left|y^{i}-y^{j}\right|^{2}\right) .
$$

Thus $B$ is positive definite.
For example, we see that the matrix $B_{i j}=\exp \left(-\left\|x^{i}-x^{j}\right\|_{1}\right)$ is positive definite whenever the points $x^{1}, \ldots, x^{n}$ are distinct.

Example 2.3.5. As in the last example, let $A_{i j}=\left\|x^{i}-x^{j}\right\|_{1}$, where $n \geq 2$ and the points $x^{1}, \ldots, x^{n}$ are distinct. Now the function $f(t)=(1+t)^{\frac{1}{2}}$ is strictly CND1 ( Micchelli (1986) ). This is the CND1 function generating the multiquadric interpolation matrix. We shall show the matrix $B \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$ defined by

$$
B_{i j}=f\left(A_{i j}\right)=\left(1+\left\|x^{i}-x^{j}\right\|_{1}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}
$$

to be strictly AND.
Firstly, since the points $x^{1}, \ldots, x^{n}$ are distinct, the previous example shows that we may write

$$
A_{i j}=\left\|x^{i}-x^{j}\right\|_{1}=\left|y^{i}-y^{j}\right|^{2},
$$

where the vectors $y^{1}, \ldots, y^{n}$ are distinct. Thus, since $f$ is strictly CND1, we deduce from Definition 2.3 .1 that $B$ is a strictly AND matrix.

We now return to the main theme of this chapter. Recall that a function $f$ is completely monotonic provided that

$$
(-1)^{k} f^{(k)}(x) \geq 0, \text { for every } k=0,1,2, \ldots \text { and for } 0<x<\infty
$$

We now require a theorem of Micchelli (1986), restated in our notation.

Theorem 2.3.6. Let $f:[0, \infty) \rightarrow[0, \infty)$ have a completely monotonic derivative. Then $f$ is a CND1 function. Further, if $f^{\prime}$ is non-constant, then $f$ is strictly CND1.

Proof. This is Theorem 2.3 of Micchelli (1986).

Corollary 2.3.7. The function $g(t)=t^{\tau}$ is strictly CND1 for every $\tau \in(0,1)$.
Proof. The conditions of the previous theorem are satisfied by $g$.

We see now that we may use this choice of $g$ in Theorem 2.3.2, as in the following corollary.

Corollary 2.3.8. For every $\tau \in(0,1)$ and for every positive integer $k \in[1, d]$, define $A^{(k)} \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$ by

$$
A_{i j}^{(k)}=\left|x_{k}^{i}-x_{k}^{j}\right|^{2 \tau}, \text { for } 1 \leq i, j \leq n .
$$

Then every $A^{(k)}$ is AND.
Proof. For each $k$, the matrix $\left(\left|x_{k}^{i}-x_{k}^{j}\right|\right)_{i, j=1}^{n}$ is a Euclidean distance matrix. Using the function $g(t)=t^{\tau}$, we now apply Theorem 2.3.2 (2) to deduce that $A^{(k)}=g\left(\left|x^{i}-x^{j}\right|^{2}\right)$ is AND.

We shall still use the notation $\|\cdot\|_{p}$ when $p \in(0,1)$, although of course these functions are not norms .

Lemma 2.3.9. For every $p \in(0,2)$, the matrix $A \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$ defined by

$$
A_{i j}=\left\|x^{i}-x^{j}\right\|_{p}^{p}, \text { for } 1 \leq i, j \leq n
$$

is AND. If $n \geq 2$ and the points $x^{1}, \ldots, x^{n}$ are distinct, then we can find distinct $y^{1}, \ldots, y^{n} \in \mathcal{R}^{n}$ such that

$$
\left\|x^{i}-x^{j}\right\|_{p}^{p}=\left|y^{i}-y^{j}\right|^{2} .
$$

Proof. If we set $p=2 \tau$, then we see that $\tau \in(0,1)$ and $A=\sum_{k=1}^{d} A^{(k)}$, where the $A^{(k)}$ are those matrices defined in Corollary 2.3.8. Hence so that each $A^{(k)}$ is

AND, and hence so is their sum. Thus, by Theorem 2.2.4, we may write

$$
A_{i j}=\left\|x^{i}-x^{j}\right\|_{p}^{p}=\left|y^{i}-y^{j}\right|^{2} .
$$

Furthermore, if $n \geq 2$ and the points $x^{1}, \ldots, x^{n}$ are distinct, then $A_{i j} \neq 0$ whenever $i \neq j$, so that the vectors $y^{1}, \ldots, y^{n}$ are distinct.

Corollary 2.3.10. For any $p \in(0,2)$ and for any $\sigma \in(0,1)$, define $B \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$ by

$$
B_{i j}=\left(\left\|x^{i}-x^{j}\right\|_{p}^{p}\right)^{\sigma} .
$$

Then $B$ is AND. As before, if $n \geq 2$ and the points $x^{1}, \ldots, x^{n}$ are distinct, then $B$ is strictly AND.

Proof. Let $A$ be the matrix of the previous lemma and let $g(t)=t^{\tau}$. We now apply Theorem 2.3.2 (2)

Theorem 2.3.11. For every $p \in(1,2)$, the $p$-norm distance matrix $B \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$, that is:

$$
B_{i j}=\left\|x^{i}-x^{j}\right\|_{p}, \text { for } 1 \leq i, j \leq n
$$

is AND. Moreover, it is strictly $A N D$ if $n \geq 2$ and the points $x^{1}, \ldots, x^{n}$ are distinct, in which case

$$
(-1)^{n-1} \operatorname{det} B>0 .
$$

Proof. If $p \in(1,2)$, then $\sigma \equiv 1 / p \in(0,1)$. Thus we may apply Corollary 2.3.12. The final inequality follows from the statement of proposition 2.2.3.

We may also apply Theorem 2.3 .2 to the $p$-norm distance matrix, for $p \in(1,2]$, or indeed to the $p^{t h}$ power of the $p-$ norm distance matrix, for $p \in(0,2)$. Of course, we do not have a norm for $0<p<1$, but we define the function in the obvious way. We need only note that, in these cases, both classes satisfy the conditions of Theorem 2.3.2 (2). We now state this formally for the $p$-norm distance matrix

Corollary 2.3.12. Suppose the matrix $B$ is the $p-n o r m$ distance matrix defined in Theorem 2.3.13. Then, if $g$ is a CND1 function, the matrix $g(B)$ defined by

$$
g(B)_{i j}=g\left(B_{i j}\right), \text { for } 1 \leq i, j \leq n,
$$

is AND. Further, if $n \geq 2$ and the points $x^{1}, \ldots, x^{n}$ are distinct, then $g(B)$ is strictly $A N D$ whenever $g$ is strictly $A N$.

Proof. This is immediate from Theorem 2.3.11 and the statement of Theorem 2.3.2 (2).

### 2.4. The case $p>2$

We are unable to use the ideas developed in the previous section to understand this case. However, numerical experiment suggested the geometry described below, which proved surprisingly fruitful. We shall view $\mathcal{R}^{m+n}$ as two orthogonal slices $\mathcal{R}^{m} \oplus \mathcal{R}^{n}$. Given any $p>2$, we take the vertices $\Gamma_{m}$ of $\left[-m^{-1 / p}, m^{-1 / p}\right]^{m} \subset \mathcal{R}^{m}$ and embed this in $\mathcal{R}^{m+n}$. Similarly, we take the vertices $\Gamma_{n}$ of $\left[-n^{-1 / p}, n^{-1 / p}\right]^{n} \subset$ $\mathcal{R}^{n}$ and embed this too in $\mathcal{R}^{m+n}$. We see that we have constructed two orthogonal cubes lying in the $p$-norm unit sphere.

Example. If $m=2$ and $n=3$, then $\Gamma_{m}=\{( \pm \alpha, \pm \alpha, 0,0,0)\}$ and $\Gamma_{n}=$ $\{(0,0, \pm \beta, \pm \beta, \pm \beta)\}$, where $\alpha=2^{-1 / p}$ and $\beta=3^{-1 / p}$.

Of course, given $m$ and $n$, we are interested in values of $p$ for which the $p-$ norm distance matrix generated by $\Gamma_{m} \cup \Gamma_{n}$ is singular. Thus we ask whether there exist scalars $\left\{\lambda_{y}\right\}_{\left\{y \in \Gamma_{m}\right\}}$ and $\left\{\mu_{z}\right\}_{\left\{z \in \Gamma_{n}\right\}}$, not all zero, such that the function

$$
s(x)=\sum_{y \in \Gamma_{m}} \lambda_{y}\|x-y\|_{p}+\sum_{z \in \Gamma_{n}} \mu_{z}\|x-z\|_{p}
$$

vanishes at every interpolation point. In fact, we shall show that there exist scalars $\lambda$ and $\mu$, not both zero, for which the function

$$
s(x)=\lambda \sum_{y \in \Gamma_{m}}\|x-y\|_{p}+\mu \sum_{z \in \Gamma_{n}}\|x-z\|_{p}
$$

vanishes at every interpolation point.
We notice that
(i) For every $y \in \Gamma_{m}$ and $z \in \Gamma_{n}$, we have $\|y-z\|_{p}=2^{1 / p}$.
(ii) The sum $\sum_{y \in \Gamma_{m}}\|\tilde{y}-y\|_{p}$ takes the same value for every vertex $\tilde{y} \in \Gamma_{m}$, and similarly, mutatis mutandis, for $\Gamma_{n}$.

Thus our interpolation equations reduce to two in number:

$$
\lambda \sum_{y \in \Gamma_{m}}\|\tilde{y}-y\|_{p}+2^{n+1 / p} \mu=0
$$

and

$$
2^{m+1 / p} \lambda+\mu \sum_{z \in \Gamma_{n}}\|\tilde{z}-z\|_{p}=0,
$$

where by (ii) above, we see that $\tilde{y}$ and $\tilde{z}$ may be any vertices of $\Gamma_{m}, \Gamma_{n}$ respectively.
We now simplify the $(1,1)$ and $(2,2)$ elements of our reduced system by use of the following lemma.

Lemma 2.4.1. Let $\Gamma$ denote the vertices of $[0,1]^{k}$. Then

$$
\sum_{x \in \Gamma}\|x\|_{p}=\sum_{l=0}^{k}\binom{k}{l} l^{1 / p} .
$$

Proof. Every vertex of $\Gamma$ has coordinates taking the values 0 or 1. Thus the distinct $p$-norms occur when exactly $l$ of the coordinates take the value 1 , for $l=0, \ldots, k$; each of these occurs with frequency $\binom{k}{l}$.

## Corollary 2.4.2.

$$
\begin{gathered}
\sum_{y \in \Gamma_{m}}\|\tilde{y}-y\|_{p}=2 \sum_{k=0}^{m}\binom{m}{k}(k / m)^{1 / p}, \text { for every } \tilde{y} \in \Gamma_{m}, \text { and } \\
\sum_{z \in \Gamma_{n}}\|\tilde{z}-z\|_{p}=2 \sum_{l=0}^{n}\binom{n}{l}(l / n)^{1 / p}, \text { for every } \tilde{z} \in \Gamma_{n} .
\end{gathered}
$$

Proof. We simply scale the result of the previous lemma by $2 m^{-1 / p}$ and $2 n^{-1 / p}$ respectively.

With this simplification, the matrix of our system becomes

$$
\left(\begin{array}{cc}
2 \sum_{k=0}^{m}\binom{m}{k}(k / m)^{1 / p} & 2^{n} \cdot 2^{1 / p} \\
2^{m} \cdot 2^{1 / p} & 2 \sum_{l=0}^{n}\binom{n}{l}(l / n)^{1 / p}
\end{array}\right) .
$$

We now recall that

$$
B_{i}\left(f_{p}, 1 / 2\right)=2^{-i} \sum_{j=0}^{i}\binom{i}{j}(j / i)^{1 / p}
$$

is the Bernstein polynomial approximation of order $i$ to the function $f_{p}(t)=t^{1 / p}$ at $t=1 / 2$. Our reference for properties for Bernstein polynomial approximation will be Davis (1975), sections 6.2 and 6.3. Hence, scaling the determinant of our matrix by $2^{-(m+n)}$, we obtain the function

$$
\varphi_{m, n}(p)=4 B_{m}\left(f_{p}, 1 / 2\right) B_{n}\left(f_{p}, 1 / 2\right)-2^{2 / p}
$$

We observe that our task reduces to investigation of the zeros of $\varphi_{m, n}$.
We first deal with the case $m=n$, noting the factorization:

$$
\varphi_{n, n}(p)=\left\{2 B_{n}\left(f_{p}, 1 / 2\right)+2^{1 / p}\right\}\left\{2 B_{n}\left(f_{p}, 1 / 2\right)-2^{1 / p}\right\} .
$$

Since $f_{p}(t) \geq 0$, for $t \geq 0$ we deduce from the monotonicity of the Bernstein approximation operator that $B_{n}\left(f_{p}, 1 / 2\right) \geq 0$. Thus the zeros of $\varphi_{n, n}$ are those of the factor

$$
\psi_{n}(p)=2 B_{n}\left(f_{p}, 1 / 2\right)-2^{1 / p} .
$$

Proposition 2.4.3. $\psi_{n}$ enjoys the following properties.
(1) $\psi_{n}(p) \rightarrow \psi(p)$, where $\psi(p)=2^{1-1 / p}-2^{1 / p}$, as $n \rightarrow \infty$.
(2) For every $p>1$, $\psi_{n}(p)<\psi_{n+1}(p)$, for every positive integer $n$.
(3) For each $n, \psi_{n}$ is strictly increasing for $p \in[1, \infty)$.
(4) For every positive integer $n$, $\lim _{p \rightarrow \infty} \psi_{n}(p)=1-2^{1-n}$.

Proof.
(1) This is a consequence of the convergence of Bernstein polynomial approximation.
(2) It suffices to show that $B_{n}\left(f_{p}, 1 / 2\right)<B_{n+1}\left(f_{p}, 1 / 2\right)$, for $p>1$ and $n$ a positive integer. We shall use Davis (1975), Theorem 6.3.4: If $g$ is a convex function on $[0,1]$, then $B_{n}(g, x) \geq B_{n+1}(g, x)$, for every $x \in[0,1]$. Further, if $g$ is non-linear in each of the intervals $\left[\frac{j-1}{n}, \frac{j}{n}\right]$, for $j=1, \ldots, n$, then the inequality is strict. Every function $f_{p}$ is concave and non-linear on $[0,1]$ for $p>1$, so that this inequality is strict and reversed.
(3) We recall that

$$
\psi_{n}(p)=2 B_{n}\left(f_{p}, 1 / 2\right)-2^{1 / p}=2^{1-n} \sum_{k=0}^{n}\binom{n}{k}(k / n)^{1 / p}-2^{1 / p}
$$

Now, for $p_{2}>p_{1} \geq 1$, we note that $t^{1 / p_{2}}>t^{1 / p_{1}}$, for $t \in(0,1)$, and also that $2^{1 / p_{2}}<2^{1 / p_{1}}$. Thus $(k / n)^{1 / p_{2}}>(k / n)^{1 / p_{1}}$, for $k=1, \ldots, n-1$ and so $\psi_{n}\left(p_{2}\right)>\psi_{n}\left(p_{1}\right)$.
(4) We observe that, as $p \rightarrow \infty$,

$$
\psi_{n}(p) \rightarrow 2^{1-n} \sum_{k=1}^{n}\binom{n}{k}-1=2\left(1-2^{-n}\right)-1=1-2^{1-n} .
$$

Corollary 2.4.4. For every integer $n>1$, each $\psi_{n}$ has a unique root $p_{n} \in(2, \infty)$. Further, $p_{n} \rightarrow 2$ strictly monotonically as $n \rightarrow \infty$.

Proof. We first note that $\psi(2)=0$, and that this is the only root of $\psi$. By proposition 2.4.3 (1) and (2), we see that

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \psi_{n}(2)=\psi(2)=0 \text { and } \psi_{n}(2)<\psi_{n+1}(2)<\psi(2)=0 .
$$

By proposition 2.4.3 (4), we know that, for $n>1, \psi_{n}$ is positive for all sufficiently large $p$. Since every $\psi_{n}$ is strictly increasing by proposition 2.4.3 (3), we deduce that each $\psi_{n}$ has a unique root $p_{n} \in(2, \infty)$ and that $\psi_{n}(p)<(>) 0$ for $p<(>) p_{n}$.

We now observe that $\psi_{n+1}\left(p_{n}\right)>\psi_{n}\left(p_{n}\right)=0$, by proposition 2.4.3 (2), whence $2<p_{n+1}<p_{n}$. Thus $\left(p_{n}\right)$ is a monotonic decreasing sequence bounded below by 2 . Therefore it is convergent with limit in $[2, \infty)$. Let $p^{*}$ denote this
limit. To prove that $p^{*}=2$, it suffices to show that $\psi\left(p^{*}\right)=0$, since 2 is the unique root of $\psi$. Now suppose that $\psi\left(p^{*}\right) \neq 0$. By continuity, $\psi$ is bounded away from zero in some compact neighbourhood $N$ of $p^{*}$. We now recall the following theorem of Dini: If we have a monotonic increasing sequence of continuous realvalued functions on a compact metric space with continuous limit function, then the convergence is uniform. A proof of this result may be found in many texts, for example Hille (1962), p. 78. Thus $\psi_{n} \rightarrow \psi$ uniformly in $N$. Hence there is an integer $n_{0}$ such that $\psi_{n}$ is bounded away from zero for every $n \geq n_{0}$. But $p^{*}=\lim p_{n}$ and $\psi_{n}\left(p_{n}\right)=0$ for each $n$, so that we have reached a contradiction. Therefore $\psi\left(p^{*}\right)=0$ as required.

Returning to our original scaled determinant $\varphi_{n, n}$, we see that $\Gamma_{n} \cup \Gamma_{n}$ generates a singular $p_{n}$-norm distance matrix and $p_{n} \searrow 2$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$. Furthermore

$$
\varphi_{m, m}(p)<\varphi_{m, n}(p)<\varphi_{n, n}(p), \text { for } 1<m<n
$$

using the same method of proof as in proposition 2.4.3 (2). Thus $\varphi_{m, n}$ has a unique root $p_{m, n}$ lying in the interval $\left(p_{n}, p_{m}\right)$. We have therefore proved the following theorem.

Theorem 2.4.5. For any positive integers $m$ and $n$, both greater than 1 , there is a $p_{m, n}>2$ such that the $\Gamma_{m} \cup \Gamma_{n}$-generated $p_{m, n}$-norm distance matrix is singular. Furthermore, if $1<m<n$, then

$$
p_{m} \equiv p_{m, m}>p_{m, n}>p_{n, n} \equiv p_{n}
$$

and $p_{n} \searrow 2$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$.
Finally, we deal with the "gaps" in the sequence $\left(p_{n}\right)$ as follows. Given a positive integer $n$, we take the configuration $\Gamma_{n} \cup \Gamma_{n}(\theta)$, where $\Gamma_{n}(\theta)$ denotes the vertices of the scaled cube $\left[-\theta n^{-1 / p}, \theta n^{-1 / p}\right]^{n}$ and $\theta>0$. The $2 \times 2$ matrix deduced from corollary 2.4.2 on page 8 becomes

$$
\left(\begin{array}{cc}
2 \sum_{k=0}^{n}\binom{n}{k}(k / n)^{1 / p} & 2^{n}\left(1+\theta^{p}\right)^{1 / p} \\
2^{n}\left(1+\theta^{p}\right)^{1 / p} & 2 \theta \sum_{k=0}^{n}\binom{n}{k}(k / n)^{1 / p}
\end{array}\right) .
$$

Thus, instead of the function $\varphi_{n, n}$ discussed above, we now consider its analogue:

$$
\varphi_{n, n, \theta}(p)=4 \theta B_{n}^{2}\left(f_{p}, 1 / 2\right)-\left(1+\theta^{p}\right)^{2 / p}
$$

If $p>p_{n}$, the unique zero of our original function $\varphi_{n, n}$, we see that $\varphi_{n, n, 1}(p) \equiv$ $\varphi_{n, n}(p)>0$, because every $\varphi_{n, n}$ is strictly increasing, by proposition 2.4.3 (3). However, we notice that $\lim _{\theta \rightarrow 0} \varphi_{n, n, \theta}(p)=-1$, so that $\varphi_{n, n, \theta}(p)<0$ for all sufficiently small $\theta>0$. Thus there exists a $\theta^{*}>0$ such that $\varphi_{n, n, \theta^{*}}(p)=0$. Since this is true for every $p>p_{n}$, we have strengthened the previous theorem. We now state this formally.

Theorem 2.4.6. For every $p>2$, there is a configuration of distinct points generating a singular p-norm distance matrix.

It is interesting to investigate how rapidly the sequence of zeros $\left(p_{n}\right)$ converges to 2. We shall use Davis (1975), Theorem 6.3.6, which states that, for any bounded function $f$ on $[0,1]$,

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} n\left(B_{n}(f, x)-f(x)\right)=\frac{1}{2} x(1-x) f^{\prime \prime}(x), \text { whenever } f^{\prime \prime}(x) \text { exists. }
$$

Applying this to

$$
\psi_{n}(p)=2 B_{n}\left(f_{p}, 1 / 2\right)-2^{1 / p}
$$

we shall derive the following bound.
Proposition 2.4.7. $p_{n}=2+O\left(n^{-1}\right)$.
Proof. We simply note that

$$
\begin{aligned}
0 & =\psi_{n}\left(p_{n}\right) \\
& =\psi\left(p_{n}\right)+O\left(n^{-1}\right), \text { by Davis (1975) 6.3.6, } \\
& =\psi(2)+\left(p_{n}-2\right) \psi^{\prime}(2)+o\left(p_{n}-2\right)+O\left(n^{-1}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $\psi^{\prime}(2) \neq 0$, we have $p_{n}-2=O\left(n^{-1}\right)$.

## 3 : Norm estimates for distance matrices

### 3.1. Introduction

In this chapter we use Fourier transform techniques to derive inequalities of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
y^{T} A y \leq-\mu y^{T} y, \quad y \in \mathcal{R}^{n} \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mu$ is a positive constant and $\sum_{j=1}^{n} y_{j}=0$. Here we are using the notation of the abstract. It can be shown that equation (3.1) implies the bound $\left\|A^{-1}\right\|_{2} \leq 1 / \mu$ (see Chapter 4). Such estimates have been derived in Ball (1989), Narcowich and Ward (1990, 1991) and Sun (1990), using a different technique. The author submits that the derivation presented here for the Euclidean norm is more perspicuous. Further, we relate the generalized Fourier transform to the measure that occurs in an important characterization theorem for those functions $\varphi$ considered here. This is useful because tables of generalized Fourier transforms are widely available, thus avoiding several of the technical calculations of Narcowich (1990, 1991). Finally, we mention some recent work of the author that provides the least upper bound on $\left\|A^{-1}\right\|_{2}$ when the points $\left(x_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ form a subset of $\mathcal{Z}^{d}$.

The norm $\|\cdot\|$ will always be the Euclidean norm in this section. We shall denote the inner product of two vectors $x$ and $y$ by $x y$.

### 3.2. The Univariate Case for the Euclidean Norm

Let $n \geq 2$ and let $\left(x_{j}\right)_{1}^{n}$ be points in $\mathcal{R}$ satisfying the condition $\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\| \geq 1$ for $j \neq k$. We shall prove that

$$
\left|\sum_{j, k=1}^{n} y_{j} y_{k}\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\|\right| \geq \frac{1}{2}\|y\|^{2}
$$

whenever $\sum_{j=1}^{n} y_{j}=0$.
We shall use the fact that the generalized Fourier transform of $\varphi(x)=|x|$ is $\hat{\varphi}(t)=-2 / t^{2}$ in the univariate case. A proof of this may be found in Jones (1982), Theorem 7.32.

Proposition 3.2.1. If $\sum_{j=1}^{n} y_{j}=0$, then

$$
\begin{align*}
\sum_{j, k=1}^{n} y_{j} y_{k}\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\| & =(2 \pi)^{-1} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty}\left(-2 / t^{2}\right) \sum_{j, k=1}^{n} y_{j} y_{k} \exp \left(i\left(x_{j}-x_{k}\right) t\right) d t \\
& =-\pi^{-1} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty}\left|\sum_{j=1}^{n} y_{j} e^{i x_{j} t}\right|^{2} t^{-2} d t \tag{3.2}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. The two expressions on the righthand side above are equal because of the useful identity

$$
\sum_{j, k=1}^{n} y_{j} y_{k} \exp \left(i\left(x_{j}-x_{k}\right) t\right)=\left|\sum_{j=1}^{n} y_{j} e^{i x_{j} t}\right|^{2}
$$

This identity will be used several times below. We now let

$$
\hat{g}(t)=\left(-2 t^{-2}\right)\left|\sum_{j=1}^{n} y_{j} e^{i x_{j} t}\right|^{2}, \quad \text { for } t \in \mathcal{R}
$$

The condition $\sum_{j=1}^{n} y_{j}=0$ implies that $\hat{g}$ is uniformly bounded. Further, since $\hat{g}(t)=\mathcal{O}\left(t^{-2}\right)$ for large $|t|$, we see that $\hat{g}$ is absolutely integrable. Thus we have the equation

$$
g(x)=(2 \pi)^{-1} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \hat{g}(t) \exp (i x t) d t
$$

A standard result of the theory of generalized Fourier transforms (cf. Jones (1982), Theorem 7.14, pages 224ff) provides the expression

$$
\sum_{j, k=1}^{n} y_{j} y_{k}\left\|x+x_{j}-x_{k}\right\|=(2 \pi)^{-1} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty}\left(-2 t^{-2}\right)\left|\sum_{j=1}^{n} y_{j} e^{i x_{j} t}\right|^{2} \exp (i x t) d t
$$

where we have used the identity stated at the beginning of this proof. We now need only set $x=0$ in this final equation.

Proposition 3.2.2. Let $B: \mathcal{R} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be a continuous function such that supp $(B)$ is contained in the interval $[-1,1]$ and $0 \leq \hat{B}(t) \leq t^{-2}$. If $n \geq 2,\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\| \geq 1$ for $j \neq k$, and $\sum_{j=1}^{n} y_{j}=0$, then

$$
\sum_{j, k=1}^{n} y_{j} y_{k}\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\| \leq-2 B(0)\|y\|^{2}
$$

Proof. By Proposition 3.2.1 and properties of Fourier transforms,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{j, k=1}^{n} y_{j} y_{k}\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\| & \leq(2 \pi)^{-1} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty}(-2 \hat{B}(t)) \sum_{j, k=1}^{n} y_{j} y_{k} \exp \left(i\left(x_{j}-x_{k}\right) t\right) d t \\
& =-2 \sum_{j, k=1}^{n} y_{j} y_{k} B\left(x_{j}-x_{k}\right) \\
& =-2 B(0)\|y\|^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

where the first inequality follows from the condition $\hat{B}(t) \leq t^{-2}$. The last line is a consequence of $\operatorname{supp}(B) \subset[-1,1]$.

Corollary 3.2.3. Let

$$
B(x)= \begin{cases}(1-|x|) / 4, & \text { if }|x| \leq 1 \\ 0, & \text { otherwise } .\end{cases}
$$

Then $B$ satisfies the conditions of Proposition 3.2.2 and $B(0)=1 / 4$.
Proof. By direct calculation, we find that

$$
\hat{B}(t)=\frac{\sin ^{2}(t / 2)}{t^{2}} \leq \frac{1}{t^{2}} .
$$

It is clear that the other conditions of Proposition 3.2.2 are satisfied.

We have therefore shown the following theorem to be true.
Theorem 3.2.4. Let $\left(x_{j}\right)_{1}^{n}$ be points in $\mathcal{R}$ such that $n \geq 2$ and $\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\| \geq 1$ when $j \neq k$. If $\sum_{j=1}^{n} y_{j}=0$, then

$$
\sum_{j, k=1}^{n} y_{j} y_{k}\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\| \leq-\frac{1}{2}\|y\|^{2}
$$

We see that a consequence of this result is the non-singularity of the Euclidean distance matrix when the points $\left(x_{j}\right)_{1}^{n}$ are distinct and $n \geq 2$. It is important to realise that the homogeneity of the Euclidean norm allows us to replace the condition" $\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\| \geq 1$ if $j \neq k$ " by " $\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\| \geq \epsilon$ if $j \neq k$ ". We restate Theorem 3.2.4 in this form for the convenience of the reader:

Theorem 3.2.4b. Choose any $\epsilon>0$ and let $\left(x_{j}\right)_{1}^{n}$ be points in $\mathcal{R}$ such that $n \geq 2$ and $\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\| \geq \epsilon$ when $j \neq k$. If $\sum_{j=1}^{n} y_{j}=0$, then

$$
\sum_{j, k=1}^{n} y_{j} y_{k}\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\| \leq-\frac{1}{2} \epsilon\|y\|^{2}
$$

We shall now show that this bound is optimal. Without loss of generality, we return to the case $\epsilon=1$. We take our points to be the integers $0,1, \ldots, n$, so that the Euclidean distance matrix, $A_{n}$ say, is given by

$$
A_{n}=\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
0 & 1 & 2 & \ldots & n \\
1 & 0 & 1 & \ldots & n-1 \\
\vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots & \\
n & n-1 & n-2 & \ldots & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

It is straightforward to calculate the inverse of $A_{n}$ :

$$
A_{n}^{-1}=\left(\begin{array}{cccccc}
(1-n) / 2 n & 1 / 2 & & & & 1 / 2 n \\
1 / 2 & -1 & 1 / 2 & & & \\
& 1 / 2 & -1 & & & \\
& & & \ddots & & \\
& & & & -1 & 1 / 2 \\
1 / 2 n & & & & 1 / 2 & (1-n) / 2 n
\end{array}\right)
$$

Proposition 3.2.5. We have the inequality $2-\left(\pi^{2} / 2 n^{2}\right) \leq\left\|A_{n}^{-1}\right\|_{2} \leq 2$.
Proof. We observe that $\left\|A_{n}^{-1}\right\|_{2} \leq\left\|A_{n}^{-1}\right\|_{1}=2$, establishing the upper bound. For the lower bound, we focus attention on the $(n-1) \times(n-1)$ symmetric tridiagonal minor of $A_{n}^{-1}$ formed by deleting its first and last rows and columns, which we shall denote by $T_{n}$. Thus we have

$$
T_{n}=\left(\begin{array}{cccccc}
-1 & 1 / 2 & & & & \\
1 / 2 & -1 & 1 / 2 & & & \\
& 1 / 2 & -1 & & & \\
& & & \ddots & & \\
& & & & -1 & 1 / 2 \\
& & & & 1 / 2 & -1
\end{array}\right)
$$

Now

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|T_{n}\right\|_{2} & =\max \left\{y^{T} A_{n}^{-1} y: y^{T} y=1 \text { and } y_{1}=y_{n+1}=0\right\} \\
& \leq \max \left\{y^{T} A_{n}^{-1} y: y^{T} y=1\right\} \\
& =\left\|A_{n}^{-1}\right\|_{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

so that $\left\|T_{n}\right\|_{2} \leq\left\|A_{n}^{-1}\right\|_{2} \leq 2$. But the eigenvalues of $T_{n}$ are given by

$$
\lambda_{k}=-1+\cos (k \pi / n), \text { for } k=1,2, \ldots, n-1
$$

Thus $\left\|T_{n}\right\|_{2}=1-\cos (\pi-\pi / n) \geq 2-\pi^{2} / 2 n^{2}$, where we have used an elementary inequality based on the Taylor series for the cosine function. The proposition is proved.

### 3.3. The Multivariate Case for the Euclidean Norm

We first prove the multivariate versions of Propositions 3.2.1 and 3.2.2, which generalize in a very straightforward way. We shall require the fact that the generalized Fourier transform of $\varphi(x)=\|x\|$ in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$ is given by

$$
\hat{\varphi}(t)=-c_{d}\|t\|^{-d-1}
$$

where

$$
c_{d}=2^{d} \pi^{(d-1) / 2} \Gamma((d+1) / 2) .
$$

This may be found in Jones (1982), Theorem 7.32. We now deal with the analogue of Proposition 3.2.1.

Proposition 3.3.1. If $\sum_{j=1}^{n} y_{j}=0$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j, k=1}^{n} y_{j} y_{k}\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\|=-c_{d}(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j=1}^{n} y_{j} e^{i x_{j} t}\right|^{2}\|t\|^{-d-1} d t \tag{3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. We define

$$
\hat{g}(t)=-c_{d}\|t\|^{-d-1}\left|\sum_{j=1}^{n} y_{j} e^{i x_{j} t}\right|^{2}
$$

The condition $\sum_{j=1}^{n} y_{j}=0$ implies this function is uniformly bounded and the decay for large argument is sufficient to ensure absolute integrability. The argument now follows the proof of Proposition 3.2.1, with obvious minor changes.

Proposition 3.3.2. Let $B: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be a continuous function such that supp $(B)$ is contained in the ball $\left\{x \in \mathcal{R}^{d}:\|x\| \leq 1\right\}, 0 \leq \hat{B}(t) \leq\|t\|^{-d-1}$ and $B(0)>0$. If $n \geq 2,\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\| \geq 1$ for $j \neq k$, and $\sum_{j=1}^{n} y_{j}=0$, then

$$
\sum_{j, k=1}^{n} y_{j} y_{k}\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\| \leq-c_{d} B(0)\|y\|^{2}
$$

Proof. The proof of Proposition 3.2.2 clearly generalizes to this case.

However, to exhibit a function $B$ satisfying the conditions of Proposition 3.3.2 is harder than in the univariate case. We modify a construction of Narcowich and Ward (1990) and Sun (1990). Let

$$
B_{0}(x)= \begin{cases}1, & \text { if }\|x\| \leq 1 / 2 \\ 0, & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

Then, using Narcowich and Ward (1990), equation 1.10 or [9], Lemma 3.3.1, we find that

$$
\hat{B}_{0}(t)=(2\|t\|)^{-d / 2} J_{\frac{d}{2}}(\|t\| / 2),
$$

where $J_{k}$ denotes the $k^{t h}$-order Bessel function of the first kind. Further, $\hat{B}_{0}$ is a radially symmetric function since $B_{0}$ is radially symmetric. We now define

$$
B=B_{0} * B_{0}
$$

so that, by the convolution theorem,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\hat{B}(t) & =\left(\hat{B}_{0}\right)^{2}(t) \\
& =(2\|t\|)^{-d} J_{\frac{d}{2}}^{2}(\|t\| / 2),
\end{aligned}
$$

and the behaviour of $J_{0}$ for large argument provides the inequality

$$
\hat{B}(t) \leq \mu_{d}\|t\|^{-d-1}
$$

for some constant $\mu_{d}$. Since the conditions of Proposition 3.3.2 are now easy to verify when $B$ is scaled by $\mu_{d}^{-1}$, we see that we are done .

### 3.4. Fourier Transforms and Bessel Transforms

Here we relate our technique to the work of Ball (1989) and Narcowich and Ward (1990, 1991).

Definition 3.4.1. A real sequence $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ is said to be zero-summing if it is finitely supported and $\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}=0$.

Definition 3.4.2. A function $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ will be said to be conditionally negative definite of order 1 on $\mathcal{R}^{d}$, hereafter shortened to $\operatorname{CND} 1(d)$, if it is continuous and, for any points $\left(x_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$ and any zero-summing sequence $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$, we have

$$
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi\left(\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\|\right) \leq 0
$$

Such functions were characterized by von Neumann and Schoenberg (1941). For every positive integer $d$, let $\Omega_{d}:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be defined by

$$
\Omega_{d}(r)=\omega_{d-1}^{-1} \int_{S^{d-1}} \cos (r y u) d y
$$

where $u$ may be any unit vector in $\mathcal{R}^{d}, S^{d-1}$ denotes the unit sphere in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$, and $\omega_{d-1}$ its ( $d-1$ )-dimensional Lebesgue measure. Thus $\Omega_{d}$ is essentially the Fourier transform of the normalized rotation invariant measure on the unit sphere.

Theorem 3.4.3. Let $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be a continuous function. A necessary and sufficient condition that $\varphi$ be a CND1(d) function is that it have the form

$$
\varphi(r)=\varphi(0)+\int_{0}^{\infty}\left(1-\Omega_{d}(r t)\right) t^{-2} d \beta(t)
$$

for every $r \geq 0$, where $\beta:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ is a non-decreasing function such that $\int_{1}^{\infty} t^{-2} d \beta(t)<\infty$ and $\beta(0)=0$. Furthermore, $\beta$ is uniquely determined by $\varphi$.

Proof. The first part of this result is Theorem 7 of von Neumann and Schoenberg (1941), restated in our terminology. The uniqueness of $\beta$ is a consequence of Lemma 2 of that paper.

It is a consequence of this theorem that there exist constants $A$ and $B$ such that $\varphi(r) \leq A r^{2}+B$. For we have

$$
\left|\int_{1}^{\infty}\left(1-\Omega_{d}(r t)\right) t^{-2} d \beta(t)\right| \leq 2 \int_{1}^{\infty} t^{-2} d \beta(t)<\infty
$$

using the fact that $\left|\Omega_{d}(r)\right| \leq 1$ for every $r \geq 0$. Further, we see that

$$
0 \leq 1-\Omega_{d}(\rho)=2 \omega_{d-1}^{-1} \int_{S^{d-1}} \sin ^{2}(\rho u t / 2) d t \leq \rho^{2} / 2
$$

which provides the bound

$$
\left|\int_{0}^{1}\left(1-\Omega_{d}(r t)\right) t^{-2} d \beta(t)\right| \leq r^{2} \int_{0}^{1} \frac{1}{2} d \beta(t)=\frac{1}{2} r^{2} \beta(1) .
$$

Thus $A=\beta(1) / 2$ and $B=\varphi(0)+2 \int_{1}^{\infty} t^{-2} d \beta(t)$ suffice. Therefore the function $\left\{\varphi(\|x\|): x \in \mathcal{R}^{d}\right\}$ is a tempered distribution in the sense of Schwartz (1966) and possesses a generalized Fourier transform $\left\{\hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\|): \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d}\right\}$. There is a rather simple relation between the generalized Fourier transform and the nondecreasing function of Theorem 3.4.3 for a certain class of functions. This is our next topic.

Definition 3.4.4. A function $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ will be termed admissible if it is a continuous function of algebraic growth which satisfies the following conditions:

1. $\hat{\varphi}$ is a continuous function on $\mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash\{0\}$.
2. The limit $\lim _{\|\xi\| \rightarrow 0}\|\xi\|^{d+1} \hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\|)$ exists.
3. The integral $\int_{\{\|\xi\| \geq 1\}}|\hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\|)| d \xi$ exists.

It is straightforward to prove the analogue of Propositions 3.2.1 and 3.3.1 for an admissible function.

Proposition 3.4.5. Let $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be an admissible function and let $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ be a zero-summing sequence. Then for any choice of points $\left(x_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$ we have the identity

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi\left(\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\|\right)=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \exp \left(i x_{j} \xi\right)\right|^{2} \hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\|) d \xi \tag{3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Let $\hat{g}: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be the function defined by

$$
\hat{g}(\xi)=\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \exp \left(i x_{j} \xi\right)\right|^{2} \hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\|)
$$

Then $\hat{g}$ is an absolutely integrable function on $\mathcal{R}^{d}$, because of the conditions on $\varphi$ and because $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ is a zero-summing sequence. Thus $\hat{g}$ is the generalized transform of $\sum_{j, k} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi\left(\left\|\cdot+x_{j}-x_{k}\right\|\right)$, and by standard properties of generalized Fourier transforms we deduce that

$$
\sum_{j, k} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi\left(\left\|x+x_{j}-x_{k}\right\|\right)=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \exp \left(i x_{j} \xi\right)\right|^{2} \hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\|) \exp (i x \xi) d \xi
$$

The proof is completed by setting $x=0$.
Proposition 3.4.6. Let $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be an admissible CND1(d) function. Then

$$
d \beta(t)=-(2 \pi)^{-d} \omega_{d-1} \hat{\varphi}(\|t u\|) t^{d+1} d t
$$

where $u$ may be any unit vector in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$.
Proof. Let $\mu$ and $\nu$ be different integers and let $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ be a sequence with only two nonzero elements, namely $y_{\mu}=-y_{\nu}=2^{-1 / 2}$. Choose any point $\zeta \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$ and set $x_{\mu}=0, x_{\nu}=\zeta$, so that equation (3.4) provides the expression

$$
\varphi(0)-\varphi(\|\zeta\|)=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}(1-\cos (\zeta \xi)) \hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\|) d \xi
$$

Employing spherical polar coordinates, this integral takes the form

$$
\varphi(0)-\varphi(\|\zeta\|)=2 \pi)^{-d} \omega_{d-1} \int_{0}^{\infty}\left(1-\Omega_{d}(t\|\zeta\|)\right) \hat{\varphi}(\|t u\|) t^{d-1} d t
$$

where $u$ may be any unit vector in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$. Setting $r=\|\zeta\|$, we have

$$
\varphi(r)=\varphi(0)+\int_{0}^{\infty}\left(1-\Omega_{d}(r t)\right) \gamma(t) t^{-2} d t
$$

where $\gamma(t)=-(2 \pi)^{-d} \omega_{d-1} \hat{\varphi}(\|t u\|) t^{d+1}$. Now Theorem 4.2.6 of the following chapter implies that $\hat{\varphi}$ is a nonpositive function. Thus there exists a nondecreasing
function $\tilde{\beta}:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ such that $\gamma(t) d t=d \tilde{\beta}(t)$, and $\int_{1}^{\infty} t^{-2} d \tilde{\beta}(t)$ is finite and $\tilde{\beta}(0)=0$. But the uniqueness of the representation of Theorem 3.4.3 implies that $\beta=\tilde{\beta}$, that is

$$
d \beta(t)=-(2 \pi)^{-d} \omega_{d-1} \hat{\varphi}(\|t u\|) t^{d+1} d t
$$

and the proof is complete.

This proposition is useful if we want to calculate $\beta$ for a particular function $\varphi$, since tables of generalized Fourier transforms are readily available.

Example 3.4.7. Let $\varphi(r)=\left(r^{2}+1\right)^{1 / 2}$. This is a non-negative CND1(d) function for all d (see Micchelli (1986)). When $d=3$, the generalized Fourier transform is $\hat{\varphi}(r)=-4 \pi r^{-2} K_{2}(r)$. Here $K_{2}$ is a modified Bessel function which is positive and smooth in $\mathcal{R}^{+}$, has a pole at the origin, and decays exponentially (See Abramowitz and Stegun (1970)). Consequently $\hat{\varphi}$ is a non-negative admissible function. Applying Theorem 3.4 .7 gives the equation

$$
\begin{aligned}
d \beta(r) & =(2 \pi)^{-3}(4 \pi) r^{4}\left(4 \pi r^{-2} K_{2}(r)\right) \\
& =\left(2 r^{2} / \pi\right) K_{2}(r) d r,
\end{aligned}
$$

agreeing with Narcowich and Ward (1991), equation 3.12.

### 3.5. The Least Upper Bound for Subsets of the Integer Grid

In the next chapter we use extensions of the technique provided here to derive the the following result.

Theorem 3.5.1. Let $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be an admissible function that is not identically zero, let $\varphi(0) \geq 0$, and let $\varphi$ be CND1(d) for every positive integer d. Further, let $\left(x_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ be any elements of $\mathcal{Z}^{d}$ and let $A=\left(\varphi\left(\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\|\right)\right)_{j, k \in \mathcal{N}}$, where $\mathcal{N}$ can be any finite subset of $\mathcal{Z}^{d}$. Then we have the inequality

$$
\left\|A^{-1}\right\| \leq\left(\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}|\hat{\varphi}(\|\pi e+2 \pi k\|)|\right)^{-1}
$$

where $e=[1, \ldots, 1]^{T} \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$ and $\hat{\varphi}$ is the generalized Fourier transform of $\varphi$. Moreover, this is the least upper bound valid for all finite subsets of $\mathcal{Z}^{d}$.

Norm estimates for distance matrices
Proof. See Section 4.4 of the thesis.

## 4 : Norm estimates for Toeplitz distance matrices I

### 4.1. Introduction

The multivariate interpolation problem is as follows: given points $\left(x_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$ in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$ and real numbers $\left(f_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$, construct a function $s: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ such that $s\left(x_{k}\right)=f_{k}$, for $k=1, \ldots, n$. The radial basis function approach is to choose a univariate function $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$, a norm $\|$.$\| on \mathcal{R}^{d}$, and to let $s$ take the form

$$
s(x)=\sum_{j=1}^{n} y_{j} \varphi\left(\left\|x-x_{j}\right\|\right)
$$

The norm $\|$.$\| will be the Euclidean norm throughout this chapter. Thus the$ radial basis function interpolation problem has a unique solution for any given scalars $\left(f_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$ if and only if the matrix $\left(\varphi\left(\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\|\right)\right)_{j, k=1}^{n}$ is invertible. Such a matrix will, as before, be called a distance matrix. These functions provide a useful and flexible form for multivariate approximation, but their approximation power as a space of functions is not addressed here.

A powerful and elegant theory was developed by I. J. Schoenberg and others some fifty years ago which may be used to analyse the singularity of distance matrices. Indeed, in Schoenberg (1938) it was shown that the Euclidean distance matrix, which is the case $\varphi(r)=r$, is invertible if $n \geq 2$ and the points $\left(x_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$ are distinct. Further, extensions of this work by Micchelli (1986) proved that the distance matrix is invertible for several classes of functions, including the Hardy multiquadric, the only restrictions on the points $\left(x_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$ being that they are distinct and that $n \geq 2$. Thus the singularity of the distance matrix has been successfully investigated for many useful radial basis functions. In this chapter, we bound the eigenvalue of smallest modulus for certain distance matrices. Specifically, we provide the greatest lower bound on the moduli of the eigenvalues in the case when the points $\left(x_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$ form a subset of the integers $\mathcal{Z}^{d}$, our method of analysis applying to a wide class of functions which includes the multiquadric. More precisely, let $N$ be any finite subset of the integers $\mathcal{Z}^{d}$ and let $\lambda_{\text {min }}^{N}$ be the
smallest eigenvalue in modulus of the distance matrix $(\varphi(\|j-k\|))_{j, k \in N}$. Then the results of Sections 3 and 4 provide the inequality

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\lambda_{\min }^{N}\right| \geq C_{\varphi}, \tag{4.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $C_{\varphi}$ is a positive constant for which an elegant formula is derived. We also provide a constructive proof that $C_{\varphi}$ cannot be replaced by any larger number, and it is for this reason that we shall describe inequality (4.1.1) as an optimal lower bound. Similarly, we shall say that an upper bound is optimal if none of the constants appearing in the inequality can be replaced by smaller numbers.

It is crucial to our analysis that the distance matrix $(\varphi(\|j-k\|))_{j, k \in N}$ may be embedded in the bi-infinite matrix $(\varphi(\|j-k\|))_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$. Such a bi-infinite matrix is called a Toeplitz matrix if $d=1$. We shall use this name for all values of $d$, since we use the multivariate form of the Fourier analysis of Toeplitz forms (see Grenander and Szegő (1984)).

Of course, inequality (4.1.1) also provides an upper bound on the norm of the inverse of the distance matrices generated by finite subsets of the integers $\mathcal{Z}^{d}$. This is not the first paper to address the problem of bounding the norms of inverses of distance matrices and we acknowledge the papers of Ball (1989) and Narcowich and Ward [1990, 1991], which first interested the author in such estimates. Their results are not limited to the case when the data points are a subset of the integers. Instead, they apply when the points satisfy the condition $\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\| \geq \epsilon$ for $j \neq k$, where $\epsilon$ is a positive constant, and they provide lower bounds on the smallest modulus of an eigenvalue for several functions $\varphi$, including the multiquadric. We will find that these bounds are not optimal, except in the special case of the Euclidean norm in the univariate case. Further, our bounds apply to all the conditionally negative definite functions of order 1 . The definition of this class of functions may be found in Section 4.3.

As in the previous section, we make extensive use of the theory of generalized Fourier transforms, for which our principal reference will still be Jones (1982). These transforms are precisely the Fourier transforms of tempered distri-
butions constructed in Schwartz (1966). First, however, Section 2 presents several theorems which require only the classical theory of the Fourier transform. These results will be necessary in Section 4.3.

### 4.2. Toeplitz forms and Theta functions

We require several properties of the Fejér kernel, which is defined as follows. For each positive integer $n$, the $n^{\text {th }}$ univariate Fejér kernel is the positive trigonometric polynomial

$$
\begin{align*}
K_{n}(t) & =\sum_{k=-n}^{n}(1-|k| / n) \exp (i k t)  \tag{4.2.1}\\
& =\frac{\sin ^{2} n t / 2}{n \sin ^{2} t / 2}
\end{align*}
$$

Further, the $n^{\text {th }}$ multivariate Fejér kernel is defined by the product

$$
\begin{equation*}
K_{n}\left(t_{1}, \ldots, t_{d}\right)=K_{n}\left(t_{1}\right) K_{n}\left(t_{2}\right) \cdots K_{n}\left(t_{d}\right), \quad t \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{4.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma 4.2.1. The univariate kernel enjoys the following property: for any continuous $2 \pi$-periodic function $f: \mathcal{R} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ and for all $x \in \mathcal{R}$ we have

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}(2 \pi)^{-1} \int_{0}^{2 \pi} K_{n}(t-x) f(t) d t=f(x)
$$

Moreover, we have the equations

$$
\begin{equation*}
(2 \pi)^{-1} \int_{0}^{2 \pi} K_{n}(t) d t=1 \tag{4.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
K_{n}(t)=\left|n^{-1 / 2} \sum_{k=0}^{n-1} \exp (i k t)\right|^{2} \tag{4.2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Most text-books on harmonic analysis contain the first property and (4.2.3). For example, see pages 89 ff, volume I, Zygmund (1979). It is elementary to deduce (4.2.4) from (4.2.1).

Lemma 4.2.2. For every continuous $[0,2 \pi]^{d}$-periodic function $f: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$, the multivariate Fejér kernel gives the convergence property

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}} K_{n}(t-x) f(t) d t=f(x)
$$

for every $x \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$. Further, $K_{n}$ is the square of the modulus of a trigonometric polynomial with real coefficients and

$$
(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}} K_{n}(t) d t=1
$$

Proof. The first property is Theorem 1.20 of chapter 17 of Zygmund (1979). The last part of the lemma is an immediate consequence of (4.2.3), (4.2.4) and the definition of the multivariate Fejér kernel.

All sequences will be real sequences here. Further, we shall say that a sequence $\left(a_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}:=\left\{a_{j}\right\}_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ is finitely supported if it contains only finitely many nonzero terms. The scalar product of two vectors $x$ and $y$ in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$ will be denoted by $x y$.

Proposition 4.2.3. Let $f: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be an absolutely integrable continuous function whose Fourier transform $\hat{f}$ is also absolutely integrable. Then for any finitely supported sequence $\left(a_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$, and for any choice of points $\left(x_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$, we have the identity

$$
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} a_{k} f\left(x_{j}-x_{k}\right)=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} \exp \left(i x_{j} \xi\right)\right|^{2} \hat{f}(\xi) d \xi
$$

Proof. The function $\left\{\sum_{j, k} a_{j} a_{k} f\left(x+x_{j}-x_{k}\right): x \in \mathcal{R}^{d}\right\}$ is absolutely integrable. Its Fourier transform is given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
{\left[\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} a_{k} f\left(\cdot+x_{j}-x_{k}\right)\right]^{\wedge}(\xi) } & =\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} a_{k} \exp \left(i\left(x_{j}-x_{k}\right) \xi\right) \hat{f}(\xi) \\
& =\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} \exp \left(i x_{j} \xi\right)\right|^{2} \hat{f}(\xi), \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d}
\end{aligned}
$$

and is therefore absolutely integrable. Therefore the Fourier inversion theorem states that

$$
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} a_{k} f\left(x+x_{j}-x_{k}\right)=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} \exp \left(i x_{j} \xi\right)\right|^{2} \hat{f}(\xi) \exp (i x \xi) d \xi
$$

Setting $x=0$ produces the stated equation.

In this dissertation a key rôle will be played by the symbol function

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma(\xi)=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \hat{f}(\xi+2 \pi k), \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{4.2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $\hat{f} \in L^{1}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right)$, then $\sigma$ is an absolutely integrable function on $[0,2 \pi]^{d}$ and its defining series is absolutely convergent almost everywhere. These facts are consequences of the relations

$$
\infty>\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}|\hat{f}(\xi)| d \xi=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}}|\hat{f}(\xi+2 \pi k)| d \xi=\int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}} \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}|\hat{f}(\xi+2 \pi k)| d \xi,
$$

the exchange of integration and summation being a consequence of Fubini's theorem. If the points $\left(x_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ are integers, then we readily deduce the following bounds on the quadratic form.

Proposition 4.2.4. Let $f$ satisfy the conditions of Proposition 4.2.3 and let $\left(a_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ be a finitely supported sequence. Then we have the identity

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} a_{k} f(j-k)=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} \exp (i j \xi)\right|^{2} \sigma(\xi) d \xi \tag{4.2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Further, letting $m=\inf \left\{\sigma(\xi): \xi \in[0,2 \pi]^{d}\right\}$ and $M=\sup \left\{\sigma(\xi): \xi \in[0,2 \pi]^{d}\right\}$, we have the bounds

$$
m \sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j}^{2} \leq \sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} a_{k} f(j-k) \leq M \sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j}^{2}
$$

Proof. Proposition 4.2.3 implies the equation

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} a_{k} f(j-k) & =\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} \exp (i j \xi)\right|^{2} \hat{f}(\xi+2 \pi k) d \xi \\
& =(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} \exp (i j \xi)\right|^{2} \sigma(\xi) d \xi
\end{aligned}
$$

the exchange of integration and summation being justified by Fubini's theorem. For the upper bound, the Parseval theorem yields the expressions

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} a_{k} f(j-k) & =(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} \exp (i j \xi)\right|^{2} \sigma(\xi) d \xi \\
& \leq M \sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j}^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

The lower bound follows similarly and the proof is complete.

The inequalities of the last proposition enjoy the following optimality property.

Proposition 4.2.5. Let $f$ satisfy the conditions of Proposition 4.2.3 and suppose that the symbol function is continuous. Then the inequalities of Proposition 4.2.4 are optimal lower and upper bounds.

Proof. Let $\xi_{M} \in[0,2 \pi]^{d}$ be a point such that $\sigma\left(\xi_{M}\right)=M$, which exists by continuity of the symbol function. We shall construct finitely supported sequences $\left\{\left(a_{j}^{(n)}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}: n=1,2, \ldots\right\}$ such that $\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}\left(a_{j}^{(n)}\right)^{2}=1$, for all $n$, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j}^{(n)} a_{k}^{(n)} f(j-k)=M \tag{4.2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

We recall from Lemma 4.2.2 that the multivariate Fejér kernel is the square of the modulus of a trigonometric polynomial with real coefficients. Therefore there exists a finitely supported sequence $\left(a_{j}^{(n)}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ satisfying the relation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j}^{(n)} \exp (i j \xi)\right|^{2}=K_{n}\left(\xi-\xi_{M}\right), \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{4.2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Further, the Parseval theorem and Lemma 4.2.2 provide the equations

$$
\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}\left(a_{j}^{(n)}\right)^{2}=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}} K_{n}\left(\xi-\xi_{M}\right) d \xi=1
$$

and

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}} K_{n}\left(\xi-\xi_{M}\right) \sigma(\xi) d \xi=\sigma\left(\xi_{M}\right)=M
$$

It follows from (4.2.6) and (4.2.8) that the limit (4.2.7) holds. The lower bound of Proposition 4.2.4 is dealt with in the same fashion.

The set of functions satisfying the conditions of Proposition 4.2.5 is nonvoid. For example, suppose that we have $\hat{f}(\xi)=\mathcal{O}\left(\|\xi\|^{-d-\delta}\right)$, for large $\|\xi\|$, where $\delta$ is a positive constant. Then the series defining the symbol function $\sigma$ converges
uniformly, by the Weierstrass M-test, and $\sigma$ is continuous, being a uniformly convergent sum of continuous functions. These remarks apply when $f$ is a Gaussian, which is the subject of the rest of this section. We shall see that the analysis of the Gaussian provides the key to many of our results.

Proposition 4.2.6. Let $\lambda$ be a positive constant and let $f(x)=\exp \left(-\lambda\|x\|^{2}\right)$, for $x \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$. Then $f$ satisfies the conditions of Proposition 4.2.5.

Proof. The Fourier transform of $f$ is the function $\hat{f}(\xi)=(\pi / \lambda)^{d / 2} \exp \left(-\|\xi\|^{2} / 4 \lambda\right)$, which is a standard calculation of the classical theory of the Fourier transform. It is clear that $f$ satisfies the conditions of Proposition 4.2.3, and that the symbol function is the expression

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma(\xi)=(\pi / \lambda)^{d / 2} \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \exp \left(-\|\xi+2 \pi k\|^{2} / 4 \lambda\right), \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{4.2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Finally, the decay of the Gaussian ensures that $\sigma$ is continuous, being a uniformly convergent sum of continuous functions.

This result is of little use unless we know the minimum and maximum values of the symbol function for the Gaussian. Therefore we show next that explicit expressions for these numbers may be calculated from properties of Theta functions. Lemmata 4.2.7 and 4.2.8 address the cases when $d=1$ and $d \geq 1$ respectively.

Lemma 4.2.7. Let $\lambda$ be a positive constant and let $E_{1}: \mathcal{R} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be the $2 \pi$-periodic function

$$
E_{1}(t)=\sum_{k=-\infty}^{\infty} \exp \left(-\lambda(t+2 k \pi)^{2}\right)
$$

Then $E_{1}(0) \geq E_{1}(t) \geq E_{1}(\pi)$ for all $t \in \mathcal{R}$.
Proof. An application of the Poisson summation formula provides the relation

$$
\begin{aligned}
E_{1}(t) & =(4 \pi \lambda)^{-1 / 2} \sum_{k=-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-k^{2} / 4 \lambda} e^{i k t} \\
& =(4 \pi \lambda)^{-1 / 2}\left(1+2 \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} e^{-k^{2} / 4 \lambda} \cos (k t)\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

This is a Theta function. Indeed, using the notation of Whittaker and Watson (1927), Section 21.11, it is a Theta function of Jacobi type

$$
\vartheta_{3}(z, q)=1+2 \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} q^{k^{2}} \cos (2 k z)
$$

where $q \in \mathcal{C}$ and $|q|<1$. Choosing $q=e^{-1 / 4 \lambda}$ we obtain the relation

$$
E_{1}(t)=(4 \pi \lambda)^{-1 / 2} \vartheta_{3}(t / 2, q) .
$$

The useful product formula for $\vartheta_{3}$ :

$$
\vartheta_{3}(z, q)=G \prod_{k=1}^{\infty}\left(1+2 q^{2 k-1} \cos 2 z+q^{4 k-2}\right)
$$

where $G=\prod_{k=1}^{\infty}\left(1-q^{2 k}\right)$, is given in Whittaker and Watson (1927), Sections 21.3 and 21.42. Thus

$$
E_{1}(t)=(4 \pi \lambda)^{-1 / 2} G \prod_{k=1}^{\infty}\left(1+2 q^{2 k-1} \cos t+q^{4 k-2}\right), \quad t \in \mathcal{R}
$$

Now each term of the infinite product is a decreasing function on the interval $[0, \pi]$, which implies that $E_{1}$ is a decreasing function on $[0, \pi]$. Since $E_{1}$ is an even $2 \pi$-periodic function, we deduce that $E_{1}$ attains its global minimum at $t=\pi$ and its maximum at $t=0$.

Lemma 4.2.8. Let $\lambda$ be a positive constant and let $E_{d}: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}^{d}$ be the $[0,2 \pi]^{d}$ periodic function given by

$$
E_{d}(x)=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \exp \left(-\lambda\|x+2 k \pi\|^{2}\right) .
$$

Then $E_{d}(0) \geq E_{d}(x) \geq E_{d}(\pi e)$, where $e=[1,1, \ldots, 1]^{T}$.
Proof. The key observation is the equation

$$
E_{d}(x)=\prod_{k=1}^{d} E_{1}\left(x_{k}\right)
$$

Thus $E_{d}(0)=\prod_{k=1}^{d} E_{1}(0) \geq \prod_{k=1}^{d} E_{1}\left(x_{k}\right)=E_{d}(x) \geq \prod_{k=1}^{d} E_{1}(\pi)=E_{d}(\pi e)$, using the previous lemma.

These lemmata imply that in the Gaussian case the maximum and minimum values of the symbol function occur at $\xi=0$ and $\xi=\pi e$ respectively, where $e=[1, \ldots, 1]^{T}$. Therefore we deduce from formula (4.2.9) that the constants of Proposition 4.2.4 are the expressions

$$
\begin{align*}
& m=(\pi / \lambda)^{d / 2} \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \exp \left(-\|\pi e+2 \pi k\|^{2} / 4 \lambda\right) \quad \text { and } \\
& M=(\pi / \lambda)^{d / 2} \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \exp \left(-\|\pi k\|^{2} / \lambda\right) \tag{4.2.10}
\end{align*}
$$

### 4.3. Conditionally negative definite functions of order 1

In this section we derive the optimal lower bound on the eigenvalue moduli of the distance matrices generated by the integers for a class of functions including the Hardy multiquadric.

Definition 4.3.1. A real sequence $\left(y_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ is said to be zero-summing if it is finitely supported and $\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}=0$.

Let $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be a continuous function of algebraic growth. Thus it is meaningful to speak of the generalized Fourier transform of the radially symmetric function $\left\{\varphi(\|x\|): x \in \mathcal{R}^{d}\right\}$. We denote this transform by $\left\{\hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\|): \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d}\right\}$, so emphasizing that it is a radially symmetric distribution, but we note that $\hat{\varphi}$ depends on $d$. We shall restrict attention to the collection of functions described below.

Definition 4.3.2. A function $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ will be termed admissible if it is a continuous function of algebraic growth which satisfies the following conditions:

1. $\hat{\varphi}$ is a continuous function on $\mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash\{0\}$.
2. The limit $\lim _{\|\xi\| \rightarrow 0}\|\xi\|^{d+1} \hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\|)$ exists.
3. The integral $\int_{\{\|\xi\| \geq 1\}}|\hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\|)| d \xi$ exists.

It is straightforward to prove the analogue of Proposition 4.2 .3 for an admissible function.

Proposition 4.3.3. Let $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be an admissible function and let $\left(y_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ be a zero-summing sequence. Then for any choice of points $\left(x_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$ we have the identity

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi\left(\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\|\right)=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \exp \left(i x_{j} \xi\right)\right|^{2} \hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\|) d \xi \tag{4.3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Let $\hat{g}: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be the function defined by

$$
\hat{g}(\xi)=\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \exp \left(i x_{j} \xi\right)\right|^{2} \hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\|)
$$

Then $\hat{g}$ is an absolutely integrable function on $\mathcal{R}^{d}$, because of the conditions on $\varphi$ and because $\left(y_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ is a zero-summing sequence. Thus $\hat{g}$ is the generalized transform of $\sum_{j, k} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi\left(\left\|\cdot+x_{j}-x_{k}\right\|\right)$, and by standard properties of generalized Fourier transforms we deduce that

$$
\sum_{j, k} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi\left(\left\|x+x_{j}-x_{k}\right\|\right)=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \exp \left(i x_{j} \xi\right)\right|^{2} \hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\|) \exp (i x \xi) d \xi
$$

The proof is completed by setting $x=0$.
We come now to the subject that is given in the title of this section.
Definition 4.3.4. Let $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be a continuous function. We shall say that $\varphi$ is conditionally negative definite of order 1 on every $\mathcal{R}^{d}$, hereafter shortened to CND1, if we have the inequality

$$
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi\left(\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\|\right) \leq 0
$$

for every positive integer $d$, for every zero-summing sequence $\left(y_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ and for any choice of points $\left(x_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$.

Such functions were completely characterized by I. J. Schoenberg (1938).

Theorem 4.3.5. A continuous function $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ is CND1 if and only if there exists a nondecreasing function $\alpha:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ such that

$$
\varphi(r)=\varphi(0)+\int_{0}^{\infty}\left[1-\exp \left(-t r^{2}\right)\right] t^{-1} d \alpha(t), \quad \text { for } r>0
$$

and the integral $\int_{1}^{\infty} t^{-1} d \alpha(t)$ exists.

Proof. This is Theorem 6 of Schoenberg (1938).

Thus $d \alpha$ is a positive Borel measure such that

$$
\int_{0}^{1} d \alpha(t)<\infty \text { and } \int_{1}^{\infty} t^{-1} d \alpha(t)<\infty
$$

Further, it is a consequence of this theorem that there exist constants $A$ and $B$ such that $\varphi(r) \leq A r^{2}+B$, where $A$ and $B$ are constants. In order to prove this assertion we note the elementary inequalities

$$
\int_{1}^{\infty}\left[1-\exp \left(-t r^{2}\right)\right] t^{-1} d \alpha(t) \leq \int_{1}^{\infty} t^{-1} d \alpha(t)<\infty
$$

and

$$
\int_{0}^{1}\left[1-\exp \left(-t r^{2}\right)\right] t^{-1} d \alpha(t) \leq r^{2} \int_{0}^{1} d \alpha(t)
$$

Thus $A=r^{2}(\alpha(1)-\alpha(0))$ and $B=\varphi(0)+\int_{1}^{\infty} t^{-1} d \alpha(t)$ suffice. Therefore we may regard a CND1 function as a tempered distribution and it possesses a generalized Fourier transform. The following relation between the transform and the integral representation of Theorem 4.3 .5 will be essential to our needs.

Theorem 4.3.6. Let $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be an admissible CND1 function. For $\xi \in$ $\mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash\{0\}$, we have the formula

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\|)=-\int_{0}^{\infty} \exp \left(-\|\xi\|^{2} / 4 t\right)(\pi / t)^{d / 2} t^{-1} d \alpha(t) \tag{4.3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Before embarking on the proof of this theorem, we require some groundwork. We shall say that a function $f: \mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash\{0\} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ is symmetric if $f(-x)=f(x)$, for every $x \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash\{0\}$.

Lemma 4.3.7. Let $\alpha:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be a nondecreasing function such that the integral $\int_{1}^{\infty} t^{-1} d \alpha(t)$ exists. Then the function

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi(\xi)=-\int_{0}^{\infty} \exp \left(-\|\xi\|^{2} / 4 t\right)(\pi / t)^{d / 2} t^{-1} d \alpha(t), \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash\{0\} \tag{4.3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

is a symmetric smooth function, that is every derivative exists.
Proof. For every nonzero $\xi$, the limit

$$
\lim _{t \rightarrow 0} \exp \left(-\|\xi\|^{2} / 4 t\right)(\pi / t)^{d / 2} t^{-1}=0
$$

implies that the integrand of expression (4.3.3) is a continuous function on $[0, \infty)$. Therefore it follows from the inequality

$$
\int_{1}^{\infty} \exp \left(-\|\xi\|^{2} / 4 t\right)(\pi / t)^{d / 2} t^{-1} d \alpha(t) \leq \pi^{d / 2} \int_{1}^{\infty} t^{-1} d \alpha(t)<\infty
$$

that the integral is well-defined. Further, a similar argument for nonzero $\xi$ shows that every derivative of the integrand with respect to $\xi$ is also absolutely integrable for $t \in[0, \infty)$, which implies that every derivative of $\psi$ exists. The proof is complete, the symmetry of $\psi$ being obvious.

Lemma 4.3.8. Let $f: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be a symmetric absolutely integrable function such that

$$
\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} \exp \left(i x_{j} t\right)\right|^{2} f(t) d t=0
$$

for every finitely supported sequence $\left(a_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ and for any choice of points $\left(x_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$. Then $f$ must vanish almost everywhere.

Proof. The given conditions on $f$ imply that the Fourier transform $\hat{f}$ is a symmetric function that satisfies the equation

$$
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} a_{k} \hat{f}\left(x_{j}-x_{k}\right)=0
$$

for every finitely supported sequence $\left(a_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ and for all points $\left(x_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$. Let $\alpha$ and $\beta$ be different integers and let $a_{\alpha}$ and $a_{\beta}$ be the only nonzero elements of
$\left(a_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$. We now choose any point $\xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash\{0\}$ and set $x_{\alpha}=0, x_{\beta}=\xi$, which provides the equation

$$
\binom{a_{\alpha}}{a_{\beta}}^{T}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\hat{f}(0) & \hat{f}(\xi) \\
\hat{f}(\xi) & \hat{f}(0)
\end{array}\right)\binom{a_{\alpha}}{a_{\beta}}=0, \quad \text { for all } a_{\alpha}, a_{\beta} \in \mathcal{R} .
$$

Therefore $\hat{f}(0)=\hat{f}(\xi)=0$, and since $\xi$ was arbitrary, $\hat{f}$ can only be the zero function. Consequently $f$ must vanish almost everywhere.

Corollary 4.3.9. Let $g: \mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash\{0\} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be a symmetric continuous function such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \exp \left(i x_{j} \xi\right)\right|^{2}|g(\xi)| d \xi<\infty \tag{4.3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \exp \left(i x_{j} \xi\right)\right|^{2} g(\xi) d \xi=0 \tag{4.3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

for every zero-summing sequence $\left(y_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ and for any choice of points $\left(x_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$. Then $g(\xi)=0$ for every $\xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash\{0\}$.

Proof. For any integer $k \in\{1, \ldots, d\}$ and for any positive real number $\lambda$, let $h$ be the symmetric function

$$
h(\xi)=g(\xi) \sin ^{2} \lambda \xi_{k}, \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash\{0\}
$$

The relation

$$
h(\xi)=g(\xi)\left|\frac{1}{2} \exp \left(i \lambda \xi_{k}\right)-\frac{1}{2} \exp \left(-i \lambda \xi_{k}\right)\right|^{2}
$$

and condition (4.3.4) imply that $h$ is absolutely integrable.
Let $\left(a_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ be any real finitely supported sequence and let $\left(b_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ be any sequence of points in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$. We define a real sequence $\left(y_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ and points $\left(x_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$ by the equation

$$
\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \exp \left(i x_{j} \xi\right)=\sin \lambda \xi_{k} \sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} \exp \left(i b_{j} \xi\right)
$$

Thus $\left(y_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ is a sequence of finite support. Further, setting $\xi=0$, we deduce that $\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}=0$, so $\left(y_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ is a zero-summing sequence. By condition (4.3.5), we have

$$
0=\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \exp \left(i x_{j} \xi\right)\right|^{2} g(\xi) d \xi=\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} \exp \left(i b_{j} \xi\right)\right|^{2} h(\xi) d \xi
$$

Therefore we can apply Lemma 4.3 .8 to $h$, finding that it vanishes almost everywhere. Hence the continuity of $g$ for nonzero argument implies that $g(\xi) \sin ^{2} \lambda \xi_{k}=$ 0 for $\xi \neq 0$. But for every nonzero $\xi$ there exist $k \in\{1, \ldots, d\}$ and $\lambda>0$ such that $\sin \lambda \xi_{k} \neq 0$. Consequently $g$ vanishes on $\mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash\{0\}$.

We now complete the proof of Theorem 4.3.6.
Proof of Theorem 4.3.6. Let $\left(y_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ be a zero-summing sequence and let $\left(x_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ be any set of points in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$. Then Theorem 4.3.5 provides the expression

$$
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi\left(\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\|\right)=-\int_{0}^{\infty}\left(\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} \exp \left(-t\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\|^{2}\right)\right) t^{-1} d \alpha(t)
$$

this integral being well-defined because of the condition $\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}=0$. Therefore, using Proposition 4.2.3 with $f(\cdot)=\exp \left(-t\|\cdot\|^{2}\right)$ in order to restate the Gaussian quadratic form in the integrand, we find the equation

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi\left(\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\|\right) \\
= & -\int_{0}^{\infty}\left[(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \exp \left(i x_{j} \xi\right)\right|^{2}(\pi / t)^{d / 2} \exp \left(-\|\xi\|^{2} / 4 t\right) d \xi\right] t^{-1} d \alpha(t) \\
= & (2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \exp \left(i x_{j} \xi\right)\right|^{2} \psi(\xi) d \xi,
\end{aligned}
$$

where we have used Fubini's theorem to exchange the order of integration and where $\psi$ is the function defined in (4.3.3). By comparing this equation with the assertion of Proposition 4.3.3, we see that the difference $g(\xi)=\hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\|)-\psi(\xi)$ satisfies the conditions of Corollary 4.3.9. Hence $\hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\|)=\psi(\xi)$ for all $\xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash\{0\}$. The proof is complete.

Remark. An immediate consequence of this theorem is that the generalized Fourier transform of an admissible CND1 function cannot change sign.

The appearance of the Gaussian quadratic form in the proof of Theorem 4.3.6 enables us to use the bounds of Lemma 4.2.8, which gives the following result.

Theorem 4.3.10. Let $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be an admissible CND1 function and let $\left(y_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ be a zero-summing sequence. Then we have the inequality

$$
\left|\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi(\|j-k\|)\right| \geq|\sigma(\pi e)| \sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}^{2},
$$

where $e=[1, \ldots, 1]^{T}$.
Proof. Applying (4.3.1) and dissecting $\mathcal{R}^{d}$ into integer translates of $[0,2 \pi]^{d}$, we obtain the equations

$$
\begin{align*}
\left|\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi(\|j-k\|)\right| & =(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \exp (i j \xi)\right|^{2}|\hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\|)| d \xi  \tag{4.3.6}\\
& =(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi] d}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \exp (i j \xi)\right|^{2}|\sigma(\xi)| d \xi
\end{align*}
$$

where the interchange of summation and integration is justified by Fubini's theorem, and where we have used the fact that $\hat{\varphi}$ does not change sign. Here the symbol function has the usual form (4.2.5). Further, using (4.3.2), we again apply Fubini's theorem to deduce the formula

$$
\begin{aligned}
|\sigma(\xi)| & =\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}|\hat{\varphi}(\|\xi+2 \pi k\|)| \\
& =\int_{0}^{\infty}\left(\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \exp \left(-\|\xi+2 \pi k\|^{2} / 4 t\right)\right)(\pi / t)^{d / 2} t^{-1} d \alpha(t) .
\end{aligned}
$$

It follows from Lemma 4.2.8 that we have the bound

$$
\begin{align*}
|\sigma(\xi)| & \geq \int_{0}^{\infty}\left(\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \exp \left(-\|\pi e+2 \pi k\|^{2} / 4 t\right)\right)(\pi / t)^{d / 2} t^{-1} d \alpha(t)  \tag{4.3.7}\\
& =|\sigma(\pi e)|
\end{align*}
$$

The required inequality is now a consequence of (4.3.6) and the Parseval relation

$$
(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \exp (i j \xi)\right|^{2} d \xi=\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}^{2} .
$$

When the symbol function is continuous on $\mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash 2 \pi \mathcal{Z}^{d}$, we can show that the previous inequality is optimal using a modification of the proof of Proposition 4.2.5. Specifically, we construct a set $\left\{\left(y_{j}^{(n)}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}: n=1,2, \ldots\right\}$ of zero-summing sequences such that $\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}\left(y_{j}^{(n)}\right)^{2}=1$ and

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left|\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}^{(n)} y_{k}^{(n)} \varphi(\|j-k\|)\right|=|\sigma(\pi e)|,
$$

which implies that we cannot replace $|\sigma(\pi e)|$ by any larger number in Theorem 4.3.10.

Corollary 4.3.11. Let $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ satisfy the conditions of Theorem 4.3.10 and let the symbol function be continuous in the set $\mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash 2 \pi \mathcal{Z}^{d}$. Then the bound of Theorem 4.3.10 is optimal.

Proof. Let $m$ be an integer such that $4 m \geq d+1$ and let $S_{m}$ be the trigonometric polynomial

$$
S_{m}(\xi)=\left[d^{-1} \sum_{j=1}^{d} \sin ^{2}\left(\xi_{j} / 2\right)\right]^{2 m}, \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d}
$$

Recalling from Lemma 4.2.2 that the multivariate Fejér kernel is the square of the modulus of a trigonometric polynomial with real coefficients, we choose a finitely supported sequence $\left(y_{j}^{(n)}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ satisfying the equations

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}^{(n)} \exp (i j \xi)\right|^{2}=K_{n}(\xi-\pi e) S_{m}(\xi), \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{4.3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Further, setting $\xi=0$ we see that $\left(y_{j}^{(n)}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ is a zero-summing sequence. Applying (4.3.6), we find the relation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}^{(n)} y_{k}^{(n)} \varphi(\|j-k\|)\right|=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}} K_{n}(\xi-\pi e) S_{m}(\xi)|\sigma(\xi)| d \xi \tag{4.3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, because the second condition of Definition 4.3.2 implies that $S_{m}|\sigma|$ is a continuous function, Lemma 4.2.2 provides the equations

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}} K_{n}(\xi-\pi e) S_{m}(\xi)|\sigma(\xi)| d \xi=S_{m}(\pi e)|\sigma(\pi e)|=|\sigma(\pi e)|
$$

It follows from (4.3.9) that we have the limit

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left|\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}^{(n)} y_{k}^{(n)} \varphi(\|j-k\|)\right|=|\sigma(\pi e)| .
$$

Finally, since $S_{m}$ is a continuous function, another application of Lemma 4.2.2 yields the equation

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}} K_{n}(\xi-\pi e) S_{m}(\xi) d \xi=S_{m}(\pi e)=1
$$

By substituting expression (4.3.8) into the left hand side and employing the Parseval relation

$$
(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}^{(n)} \exp (i j \xi)\right|^{2} d \xi=\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}\left(y_{j}^{(n)}\right)^{2}
$$

we find the relation $\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}\left(y_{j}^{(n)}\right)^{2}=1$.

### 4.4. Applications

This section relates the optimal inequality given in Theorem 4.3.10 to the spectrum of the distance matrix, using an approach due to Ball (1989). We apply the following theorem.

Theorem 4.4.1. Let $A \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$ be a symmetric matrix with eigenvalues $\lambda_{1} \geq$ $\cdots \geq \lambda_{n}$. Let $E$ be any subspace of $\mathcal{R}^{n}$ of dimension $m$. Then we have the inequality

$$
\max \left\{x^{T} A x: x^{T} x=1, x \perp E\right\} \geq \lambda_{m+1} .
$$

Proof. This is the Courant-Fischer minimax theorem. See Wilkinson (1965), pages 99ff.

For any finite subset $N$ of $\mathcal{Z}^{d}$, let $A_{N}$ be the distance matrix $(\varphi(\| j-$ $k \|))_{j, k \in N}$. Further, let the eigenvalues of $A_{N}$ be $\lambda_{1} \geq \cdots \geq \lambda_{|N|}$, where $|N|$ is the cardinality of $N$, and let $\lambda_{\min }^{N}$ be the smallest eigenvalue in modulus.

Proposition 4.4.2. Let $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be a CND1 function that is not identically zero. Let $\varphi(0) \geq 0$ and let $\mu$ be a positive constant such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi(\|j-k\|) \leq-\mu \sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}^{2} \tag{4.4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

for every zero-summing sequence $\left(y_{j}\right)_{\mathcal{Z}^{d}}$. Then for every finite subset $N$ of $\mathcal{Z}^{d}$ we have the bound

$$
\left|\lambda_{\min }^{N}\right| \geq \mu .
$$

Proof. Equation (4.4.1) implies that

$$
y^{T} A_{N} y \leq-\mu y^{T} y
$$

for every vector $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j \in N}$ such that $\sum_{j \in N} y_{j}=0$. Thus Theorem 4.4.1 implies that the eigenvalues of $A_{N}$ satisfy $-\mu \geq \lambda_{2} \geq \cdots \geq \lambda_{|N|}$, where the subspace $E$ of that theorem is simply the span of the vector $[1,1, \ldots, 1]^{T} \in \mathcal{R}^{N}$. In particular, $0>\lambda_{2} \geq \cdots \geq \lambda_{|N|}$. This observation and the condition $\varphi(0) \geq 0$ provide the expressions

$$
0 \leq \operatorname{trace} A_{N}=\lambda_{1}+\sum_{j=2}^{|N|} \lambda_{j}=\lambda_{1}-\sum_{j=2}^{|N|}\left|\lambda_{j}\right| .
$$

Hence we have the relations $\lambda_{\min }^{N}=\lambda_{2} \leq-\mu$. The proof is complete.
We now turn to the case of the multiquadric $\varphi_{c}(r)=\left(r^{2}+c^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}$, in order to furnish a practical example of the above theory. This is a non-negative CND1 function (see Micchelli (1986)) and its generalized Fourier transform is the expression

$$
\hat{\varphi}_{c}(\|\xi\|)=-\pi^{-1}(2 \pi c /\|\xi\|)^{(d+1) / 2} K_{(d+1) / 2}(c\|\xi\|)
$$

for nonzero $\xi$, which may be found in Jones (1982). Here $\left\{K_{\nu}(r): r>0\right\}$ is a modified Bessel function which is positive and smooth in $\mathcal{R}^{+}$, has a pole at the origin, and decays exponentially (Abramowitz and Stegun (1970)). Consequently, $\varphi_{c}$ is a non-negative admissible CND1 function. Further, the exponential decay of $\hat{\varphi}_{c}$ ensures that the symbol function

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{c}(\xi)=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \hat{\varphi}_{c}(\|\xi+2 \pi k\|) \tag{4.4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

is continuous for $\xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash 2 \pi \mathcal{Z}^{d}$. Therefore, given any finite subset $N$ of $\mathcal{Z}^{d}$, Theorem 4.3.10 and Proposition 4.2 imply that the distance matrix $A_{N}$ has every eigenvalue bounded away from zero by at least

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mu_{c}=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}\left|\hat{\varphi}_{c}(\|\pi e+2 \pi k\|)\right|, \tag{4.4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $e=[1,1, \ldots, 1]^{T} \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$. Moreover, Corollary 4.3 .11 shows that this bound is optimal.

It follows from (4.4.3) that $\mu_{c} \rightarrow 0$ as $c \rightarrow \infty$, because of the exponential decay of the modified Bessel functions for large argument. For example, in the univariate case we have the formula

$$
\mu_{c}=(4 c / \pi)\left[K_{1}(c \pi)+K_{1}(3 c \pi) / 3+K_{1}(5 c \pi) / 5+\cdots\right]
$$

and Table 4.1 displays some values of $\mu_{c}$. Of course, a practical implication of this result is that we cannot expect accurate direct solution of the interpolation equations for even quite modest values of $c$, at least without using some special technique.

| $c$ | Optimal bound |
| :--- | :--- |
| 1.0 | $4.319455 \times 10^{-2}$ |
| 2.0 | $2.513366 \times 10^{-3}$ |
| 3.0 | $1.306969 \times 10^{-4}$ |
| 4.0 | $6.462443 \times 10^{-6}$ |
| 5.0 | $3.104941 \times 10^{-7}$ |
| 10.0 | $6.542373 \times 10^{-14}$ |
| 15.0 | $2.089078 \times 10^{-20}$ |

Table 4.1: The optimal bound on the smallest eigenvalue as $c \rightarrow \infty$
The optimal bound is achieved only when the numbers of centres is infinite. Therefore it is interesting to investigate how rapidly $\left|\lambda_{\text {min }}^{N}\right|$ converges to the optimal lower bound as $|N|$ increases. Table 4.2 displays $\left|\lambda_{\text {min }}^{N}\right|=\mu_{c}(n)$, say, for the distance matrix $\left(\varphi_{c}(\|j-k\|)\right)_{j, k=0}^{n-1}$ for several values of $n$ when $c=1$. The
third column lists close estimates of $\mu_{c}(n)$ obtained using a theorem of Szegő (see Section 5.2 of Grenander and Szegő (1984)). Specifically, Szegő's theorem provides the approximation

$$
\mu_{c}(n) \approx \sigma_{c}(\pi+\pi / n)
$$

where $\sigma_{c}$ is the function defined in (4.4.2). This theorem of Szegő requires the fact that the minimum value of the symbol function is attained at $\pi$, which is inequality (4.3.7). Further, it provides the estimates

$$
\lambda_{k+1} \approx \sigma_{c}(\pi+k \pi / n), \quad k=1, \ldots, n-1
$$

for all the negative eigenvalues of the distance matrix. Figure 4.1 displays the numbers $\left\{-1 / \lambda_{k}: k=2, \ldots, n\right\}$ and their estimates $\{-1 / \sigma(\pi+k \pi / n): k=$ $1, \ldots, n-1\}$ in the case when $n=100$. We see that the agreement is excellent. Furthermore, this modification of the classical theory of Toeplitz forms also provides an interesting and useful perspective on the construction of efficient preconditioners for the conjugate gradient solution of the interpolation equations. We include no further information on these topics, this last paragraph being presented as an apéritif to the paper of Baxter (1992c).

| $n$ | $\mu_{1}(n)$ | $\sigma_{1}(\pi+\pi / n)$ |
| :--- | :---: | :---: |
| 100 | $4.324685 \times 10^{-2}$ | $4.324653 \times 10^{-2}$ |
| 150 | $4.321774 \times 10^{-2}$ | $4.321765 \times 10^{-2}$ |
| 200 | $4.320758 \times 10^{-2}$ | $4.320754 \times 10^{-2}$ |
| 250 | $4.320288 \times 10^{-2}$ | $4.320286 \times 10^{-2}$ |
| 300 | $4.320033 \times 10^{-2}$ | $4.320032 \times 10^{-2}$ |
| 350 | $4.319880 \times 10^{-2}$ | $4.319879 \times 10^{-2}$ |

Table 4.2: Some calculated and estimated values of $\lambda_{\min }^{N}$ when $c=1$


Figure 4.1. Spectral estimates for a distance matrix of order 100

### 4.5. A stability estimate

The purpose of this last note is to derive an optimal inequality of the form

$$
\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \varphi(\|x-j\|)\right|^{2} d x \geq C_{\varphi} \sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}^{2}
$$

where $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ is a real sequence of finite support such that $\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}=0$, and $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ belongs to a certain class of functions including the multiquadric. Specifically, this is the class of admissible CND1 functions. These functions have
generalized Fourier transforms given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\|)=-\int_{0}^{\infty} \exp \left(-\|\xi\|^{2} / t\right) d \mu(t) \tag{4.5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $d \mu$ is a positive (but not finite) Borel measure on $[0, \infty)$. A derivation of this expression may be found in Theorem 4.2.6 above.

Lemma 4.5.1. Let $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ be a zero-summing sequence and let $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be an admissible CND1 function. Then we have the equation

$$
\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \varphi(\|x-j\|)\right|^{2} d x=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \exp (i j \xi)\right|^{2} \sigma(\xi) d \xi,
$$

where $\sigma(\xi)=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}|\hat{\varphi}(\|\xi+2 \pi k\|)|^{2}$.
Proof. Applying the Parseval theorem and dissecting $\mathcal{R}^{d}$ into copies of the cube $[0,2 \pi]^{d}$, we obtain the equations

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \varphi(\|x-j\|)\right|^{2} d x \\
& \quad=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \exp (i j \xi)\right|^{2}|\hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\|)|^{2} d \xi \\
& =\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \exp (i j \xi)\right|^{2}|\hat{\varphi}(\|\xi+2 \pi k\|)|^{2} d \xi \\
& =(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \exp (i j \xi)\right|^{2} \sigma(\xi) d \xi,
\end{aligned}
$$

where the interchange of summation and integration is justified by Fubini's theorem.

If $\sigma(\xi) \geq m$ for almost every point $\xi$ in $[0,2 \pi]^{d}$, then the import of Lemma 4.5.1 is the bound

$$
\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \varphi(\|x-j\|)\right|^{2} d x \geq m \sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}^{2} .
$$

We shall prove that we can take $m=\sigma(\pi e)$, where $e=[1,1, \ldots, 1]^{T} \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$. Further, we shall show that the inequality is optimal if the function $\sigma$ is continuous at the point $\pi e$.

Equation (4.5.1) is the key to this analysis, just as before. We see that

$$
|\hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\|)|^{2}=\int_{0}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} \exp \left(-\|\xi\|^{2}\left(t_{1}^{-1}+t_{2}^{-1}\right)\right) d \mu\left(t_{1}\right) d \mu\left(t_{2}\right)
$$

whence,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma(\xi)=\int_{0}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \exp \left(-\|\xi+2 \pi k\|^{2}\left(t_{1}^{-1}+t_{2}^{-1}\right)\right) d \mu\left(t_{1}\right) d \mu\left(t_{2}\right) \tag{4.5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the interchange of summation and integration is justified by Fubini's theorem.

Now it is proved in Lemma 4.1.8 that

$$
\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \exp \left(-\lambda\|\xi+2 \pi k\|^{2}\right) \geq \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \exp \left(-\lambda\|\pi e+2 \pi k\|^{2}\right),
$$

for any positive constant $\lambda$. Therefore equation (4.5.2) provides the inequality

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sigma(\xi) & \geq \int_{0}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \exp \left(-\|\pi e+2 \pi k\|^{2}\left(t_{1}^{-1}+t_{2}^{-1}\right)\right) d \mu\left(t_{1}\right) d \mu\left(t_{2}\right) \\
& =\sigma(\pi e)
\end{aligned}
$$

which is the promised value of the lower bound $m$ on $\sigma$ mentioned above. Thus we have proved the following theorem.

Theorem 4.5.2. Let $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}, \varphi$ and $\sigma$ be as defined in Lemma 1. Then we have the inequality

$$
\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \varphi(\|x-j\|)\right|^{2} d x \geq \sigma(\pi e) \sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}^{2}
$$

The proof that this bound is optimal uses the technique of Theorem 4.2.11.

Theorem 4.5.3. The inequality of Theorem 2 is optimal if $\sigma$ is continuous at $\pi e$.

Proof. The condition that $\varphi$ be admissible requires the existence of the limit $\lim _{\|\xi\| \rightarrow 0}\|\xi\|^{d+1} \hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\|)$. Let $m$ be a positive integer such that $2 m \geq d+1$ and let us define a sequence $\left\{\left(y_{j}^{(n)}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}: n=1,2, \ldots\right\}$ by

$$
\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}^{(n)} \exp (i j \xi)\right|^{2}=\left(d^{-1} \sum_{j=1}^{d} \sin ^{2}\left(\xi_{j} / 2\right)\right)^{2 m} K_{n}(\xi-\pi e)
$$

where $K_{n}$ denotes the multivariate Fejér kernel. The standard properties of the Fejér kernel needed for this proof are described in Lemma 4.1.2. They allow us to deduce that $\left(y_{j}^{(n)}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ is a zero-summing for every $n$. Further, we see that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}\left|y_{j}^{(n)}\right|^{2} & =(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}} K_{n}(\xi-\pi e)\left(d^{-1} \sum_{j=1}^{d} \sin ^{2}\left(\xi_{j} / 2\right)\right)^{2 m} d \xi \\
& =1, \quad \text { for } n \geq 4 m
\end{aligned}
$$

Finally, $m$ has been chosen so that the function

$$
\left\{\left(d^{-1} \sum_{j=1}^{d} \sin ^{2}\left(\xi_{j} / 2\right)\right)^{2 m} \sigma(\xi): \xi \in[0,2 \pi]^{d}\right\}
$$

is continuous. Therefore, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \varphi(\|x-j\|)\right|^{2} d x \\
& \quad=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}} K_{n}(\xi-\pi e)\left(d^{-1} \sum_{j=1}^{d} \sin ^{2}\left(\xi_{j} / 2\right)\right)^{2 m} \sigma(\xi) d \xi \\
& \quad=\sigma(\pi e)
\end{aligned}
$$

using the fact that $\sigma$ is continuous at $\pi e$ and standard properties of the Fejér kernel.

### 4.6. Scaling the infinite grid

Here we consider the behaviour of the norm estimate given above when we scale the infinite regular grid.

Proposition 4.6.1. Let $r$ be a positive number and let $\left(a_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ be a real sequence of finite support. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} a_{k} \exp \left(-\|r j-r k\|^{2}\right)=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi] d}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} \exp i j \xi\right|^{2} E_{r}^{(d)}(\xi) d \xi \tag{4.6.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{r}^{(d)}(\xi)=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} e^{-\|r k\|^{2}} \exp i k \xi, \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{4.6.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Section 4.2 provides the equation

$$
\begin{gather*}
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} a_{k} \exp \left(-\|r j-r k\|^{2}\right) \\
=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi] d}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} \exp i j \xi\right|^{2}\left(\pi / r^{2}\right)^{d / 2} \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \exp \left(-\|\xi+2 \pi k\|^{2} / 4 r^{2}\right) d \xi . \tag{4.6.3}
\end{gather*}
$$

Further, the Poisson summation formula gives the relation

$$
\begin{equation*}
(2 \pi)^{d} \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \exp \left(-\|\xi+2 \pi k\|^{2} / 4 r^{2}\right)=\left(4 \pi r^{2}\right)^{d / 2} \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} e^{-\|r k\|^{2}} \exp i k \xi . \tag{4.6.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Substituting (4.6.4) into (4.6.3) yields equations (4.6.1) and (4.6.2).
The functions $E_{r}^{(1)}$ and $E_{r}^{(d)}$ are related in a simple way.
Lemma 4.6.2. We have the expression

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{r}^{(d)}(\xi)=\prod_{k=1}^{d} E_{r}^{(1)}\left(\xi_{k}\right) \tag{4.6.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. This is a straightforward consequence of (4.6.2).

Applying the theta function formulae of Section 4.2 yields the following result.

## Lemma 4.6.3.

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{r}^{(1)}(\xi)=\prod_{k=1}^{\infty}\left(1-e^{-2 k r^{2}}\right)\left(1+2 e^{-(2 k-1) r^{2}} \cos \xi+e^{-(4 k-2) r^{2}}\right) \tag{4.6.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. The Theta function $\theta_{3}$ of Jacobi type is given by

$$
\begin{align*}
\theta_{3}(z, q) & =1+2 \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} q^{k^{2}} \cos 2 k z, \quad q, z \in \mathcal{C},|q|<1, \\
& =\prod_{k=1}^{\infty}\left(1-q^{2 k}\right)\left(1+2 q^{2 k-1} \cos 2 z+q^{4 k-2}\right), \tag{4.6.7}
\end{align*}
$$

which equations are discussed in greater detail in Section 4.2. Setting $q=e^{-r^{2}}$ we have the expressions

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{r}^{(1)}(\xi)=\theta_{3}(\xi / 2, q)=\prod_{k=1}^{\infty}\left(1-e^{-2 k r^{2}}\right)\left(1+2 e^{-(2 k-1) r^{2}} \cos \xi+e^{-(4 k-2) r^{2}}\right) \tag{4.6.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

The proof is complete.

Now Section 4.3 provides the inequality

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} a_{k} \exp \left(-\|r j-r k\|^{2}\right) \geq E_{r}^{(d)}(\pi e) \sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j}^{2} \tag{4.6.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $e=[1, \ldots, 1]^{T} \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$. Using equation (4.6.6), we see that

$$
\begin{align*}
E_{r}^{(1)}(\pi) & =\prod_{k=1}^{\infty}\left(1-e^{-2 k r^{2}}\right)\left(1-2 e^{-(2 k-1) r^{2}}+e^{-(4 k-2) r^{2}}\right) \\
& =\prod_{k=1}^{\infty}\left(1-e^{-2 k r^{2}}\right)\left(1-e^{-(2 k-1) r^{2}}\right)^{2} \tag{4.6.10}
\end{align*}
$$

which implies that $\left\{E_{r}^{(\pi)}: r>0\right\}$ is an increasing function. Further, it is a consequence of (4.6.5) that $\left\{E_{r}^{(d)}(\pi e): r>0\right\}$ is also an increasing function. We state these results formally.

Theorem 4.6.4. Let $r>s>0$. Then we have the inequality

$$
\begin{equation*}
\inf \sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} a_{k} \exp \left(-\|r j-r k\|^{2}\right) \geq \inf \sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} a_{k} \exp \left(-\|s j-s k\|^{2}\right) \tag{4.6.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the infima are taken over the set of real sequences of finite support.

In fact we extend the given analysis to a class of functions including the multiquadric. The appropriate definitions and theorems form Section 4.3, but the key result is Theorem 4.3.6: Under suitable conditions, the function $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ possesses the generalized Fourier transform

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(\|\xi\|)=-\int_{0}^{\infty} \exp \left(-\|\xi\|^{2} / 4 t\right) t^{-1} d \mu(t) \tag{4.6.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(r)=\varphi(0)+\int_{0}^{\infty}\left(1-e^{-r^{2} t}\right) t^{-1} d \mu(t) \tag{4.6.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $\mu$ is a positive Borel measure such that $\int_{0}^{1} d \mu(t)<\infty$ and $\int_{1}^{\infty} t^{-1} d \mu(t)<\infty$. Now the function $\varphi_{r}: x \mapsto \varphi(\|r x\|)$ has the Fourier transform

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\varphi}_{r}(\|\xi\|)=\hat{\varphi}(\|\xi\| / r) r^{-d} \tag{4.6.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Further, the associated symbol function is defined by the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{r}(\xi)=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}\left|\hat{\varphi}_{r}(\|\xi+2 \pi k\|)\right|, \tag{4.6.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

and so (4.6.13) implies the expression

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{r}(\xi)=\int_{0}^{\infty} r^{-d} \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \exp \left(-\|\xi+2 \pi k\|^{2} / 4 t r^{2}\right)(\pi / t)^{d / 2} t^{-1} d \mu(t) \tag{4.6.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using the Poisson summation formula, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
(2 \pi)^{d} \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \exp \left(-\|\xi+2 \pi k\|^{2} / 4 t r^{2}\right)=\left(4 t r^{2} \pi\right)^{d / 2} \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} e^{-\|k\|^{2} t r^{2}} e^{i k \xi} \tag{4.6.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Consequently we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
r^{-d}(\pi / t)^{d / 2} \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \exp \left(-\|\xi+2 \pi k\|^{2} / 4 t r^{2}\right)=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} e^{-\|k\|^{2} r^{2} t} e^{i k \xi}=E_{r t^{1 / 2}}^{(d)}(\xi), \tag{4.6.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

providing the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{r}(\pi e)=\int_{0}^{\infty} E_{r t^{1 / 2}}^{(d)}(\pi e) t^{-1} d \mu(t) \tag{4.6.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

and so $\left\{\sigma_{r}(\pi e): r>0\right\}$ is an increasing function.

## Appendix

I do not like stating integral representations such as Theorem 4.3.5 without including some explicit examples. Therefore this appendix calculates $d \alpha$ for $\varphi(r)=r$ and $\varphi(r)=\left(r^{2}+c^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}$, where $c$ is positive and we are using the notation of 4.3.5.

For $\varphi(r)=r$ the key integral is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Gamma\left(-\frac{1}{2}\right)=\int_{0}^{\infty}\left(e^{-u}-1\right) u^{-3 / 2} d u \tag{A1}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is derived in Whittaker and Watson (1927), Section 12.21. Making the substitution $u=r^{2} t$ in (A1) and using the equations $\pi^{1 / 2}=\Gamma(1 / 2)=-\Gamma(-1 / 2) / 2$ we have

$$
-(4 \pi)^{1 / 2}=r^{-1} \int_{0}^{\infty}\left(e^{-r^{2} t}-1\right) t^{-3 / 2} d t
$$

that is

$$
\begin{equation*}
r=\int_{0}^{\infty}\left(1-e^{-r^{2} t}\right) t^{-1}(4 \pi t)^{-1 / 2} d t \tag{A2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus the Borel measure is $d \alpha_{1}(t)=(4 \pi t)^{-1 / 2} d t$ and $\int_{0}^{1} d \alpha_{1}(t)=\int_{1}^{\infty} t^{-1} d \alpha_{1}(t)=$ $\pi^{1 / 2}$ 。

The representation for the multiquadric is an easy consequence of (A2). Substituting $\left(r^{2}+c^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}$ and $c$ for $r$ in (A2) we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(r^{2}+c^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}=\int_{0}^{\infty}\left(1-e^{-\left(r^{2}+c^{2}\right) t}\right) t^{-1}(4 \pi t)^{-1 / 2} d t \tag{A3}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
c=\int_{0}^{\infty}\left(1-e^{-c^{2} t}\right) t^{-1}(4 \pi t)^{-1 / 2} d t \tag{A4}
\end{equation*}
$$

respectively. Subtracting (A4) from (A3) provides the formula

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(r^{2}+c^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}=c+\int_{0}^{\infty}\left(1-e^{-r^{2} t}\right) t^{-1} e^{-c^{2} t}(4 \pi t)^{-1 / 2} d t \tag{A5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence the measure is $d \alpha_{2}(t)=e^{-c^{2} t}(4 \pi t)^{-1 / 2} d t$.

## 5 : Norm estimates for Toeplitz distance matrices II

### 5.1. Introduction

Let $\varphi: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be an even continuous function of at most polynomial growth. Associated with this function is a symmetric bi-infinite multivariate Toeplitz matrix

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Phi=(\varphi(j-k))_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \tag{5.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Every finite subset $I=\left(i_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$ of $\mathcal{Z}^{d}$ determines a finite submatrix of $\Phi$ given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Phi_{I}:=\left(\varphi\left(i_{j}-{ }_{k} k\right)\right)_{j, k=1}^{n} . \tag{5.1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

We are interested in upper bounds on the $\ell^{2}$-norm of the inverse matrix $\Phi^{-1}$, that is the quantity

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\Phi_{I}^{-1}\right\|=1 / \min \left\{\|x\|_{2}:\left\|\Phi_{I} x\right\|_{2}=1, \quad x \in \mathcal{R}^{I}\right\} \tag{5.1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\|x\|_{2}^{2}=\sum_{j \in I} x_{j}^{2}$ for $x=\left(x_{j}\right)_{j \in I}$. The type of bound we seek follows the pattern of results in the previous chapter. Specifically, we let $\hat{\varphi}$ be the distributional Fourier transform of $\varphi$ in the sense of Schwartz (1966), which we assume to be a measurable function on $\mathcal{R}^{d}$. We let $e:=(1, \ldots, 1)^{T} \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$ and set

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tau_{\hat{\varphi}}:=\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}|\hat{\varphi}(\pi e+2 \pi j)| \tag{5.1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

whenever the right hand side of this equation is meaningful. Then, for a certain class of radially symmetric functions, we proved in Chapter 4 that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\Phi_{I}^{-1}\right\| \leq 1 / \tau_{\hat{\varphi}} \tag{5.1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

for every finite subset $I$ of $\mathcal{Z}^{d}$. Here we extend this bound to a wider class of functions which need not be radially symmetric. For instance, we show that (5.1.5) holds for the class of functions

$$
\varphi(x)=\left(\|x\|_{1}+c\right)^{\gamma}, \quad x \in \mathcal{R}^{d}
$$

where $\|x\|_{1}=\sum_{j=1}^{d}\left|x_{j}\right|$ is the $\ell_{1}$-norm of $x, c$ is non-negative, and $0<\gamma<1$.
Our analysis develops the methods of Chapter 4 . However, here we emphasize the importance of certain properties of Pólya frequency functions and Pólya frequency sequences (due to I. J. Schoenberg) in order to obtain estimates like (5.1.5)

In Section 2 we consider Fourier transform techniques which we need to prove our bound. Further, the results of this section improve on the treatment of the last chapter, in that the condition of admissibility (see Definition 5.3.2) is shown to be unnecessary. Section 3 contains a discussion of the class of functions $\varphi$ for which we will prove the bound (5.1.4). The final section contains the proof of our main result.

### 5.2. Preliminary facts

We begin with a rather general framework. Let $\varphi: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be a continuous function of polynomial growth. Thus $\varphi$ possesses a distributional Fourier transform in the sense of Schwartz (1966). We shall assume $\hat{\varphi}$ is almost everywhere equal to a Lebesgue measurable function on $\mathcal{R}^{d}$, that is we assume $\hat{\varphi}$ to be the sum of a measurable function and a tempered distribution whose support is a set of Lebesgue measure zero. Given a nonzero real sequence $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ of finite support and points $\left(x^{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$, we introduce the function $F: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(x)=\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi\left(x+x^{j}-x^{k}\right), \quad x \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{5.2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(0)=\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi\left(x^{j}-x^{k}\right) \tag{5.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is the quadratic form whose study is the object of much of this dissertation. We observe that the Fourier transform of $F$ is the tempered distribution

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{F}(\xi)=\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} e^{i x^{j} \xi}\right|^{2} \hat{\varphi}(\xi), \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{5.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Further, if $\hat{F}$ is an absolutely integrable function, then we have the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(0)=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}} \hat{F}(\xi) d \xi \tag{5.2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

since $F$ is the inverse distributional Fourier transform of $\hat{F}$ and this coincides with the classical inverse transform when $\hat{F} \in L^{1}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right)$. In other words, we have the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi\left(x^{j}-x^{k}\right)=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} e^{i x^{j} \xi}\right|^{2} \hat{\varphi}(\xi) d \xi \tag{5.2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $\hat{F}$ is absolutely integrable. If we make the further assumption that $\hat{\varphi}$ is onesigned almost everywhere on $\mathcal{R}^{d}$, and the points $\left(x^{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ form a subset of the integers $\mathcal{Z}^{d}$, then it is possible to improve (5.2.5). First observe that dissecting $\mathcal{R}^{d}$ into $2 \pi$-integer translates of the cube $[0,2 \pi]^{d}$ provides the relations

$$
\begin{align*}
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi(j-k) & =(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} e^{i j \xi}\right|^{2} \hat{\varphi}(\xi) d \xi \\
& =\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} e^{i j \xi}\right|^{2} \hat{\varphi}(\xi+2 \pi k) d \xi  \tag{5.2.6}\\
& =(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi] d}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} e^{i j \xi}\right|^{2} \sigma(\xi) d \xi
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma(\xi)=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \hat{\varphi}(\xi+2 \pi k), \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{5.2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the monotone convergence theorem justifies the exchange of summation and integration. Further, we see that another consequence of the condition that $\hat{\varphi}$ be one-signed is the bound

$$
\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} e^{i j \xi}\right|^{2}|\hat{\varphi}(\xi)|<\infty
$$

for almost every point $\xi \in[0,2 \pi]^{d}$, because the left hand side of (5.2.6) is a fortiori finite. This implies that $\sigma$ is almost everywhere finite, since the set of all zeros of a nonzero trigonometric polynomial has measure zero. This last result is well-known, but we include its short proof for completeness. Following Rudin
(1973), we shall say that a continuous function $f: \mathcal{C}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{C}$ is an entire function of $d$ complex variables if, for every point $\left(w_{1}, \ldots, w_{d}\right) \in \mathcal{C}^{d}$ and for every $j \in\{1, \ldots, d\}$, the mapping

$$
\mathcal{C} \ni z \mapsto f\left(w_{1}, \ldots, w_{j-1}, z, w_{j+1}, \ldots, w_{d}\right)
$$

is an entire function of one complex variable.
Lemma 5.2.1. Given complex numbers $\left(a_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$ and a set of distinct points $\left(x^{j}\right)_{1}^{n}$ in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$, we let $p: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{C}$ be the function

$$
p(\xi)=\sum_{j=1}^{n} a_{j} e^{i x^{j} \xi}, \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d}
$$

Then $p$ enjoys the following properties:
(i) $p$ is identically zero if and only if $a_{j}=0,1 \leq j \leq n$.
(ii) $p$ is nonzero almost everywhere unless $a_{j}=0,1 \leq j \leq n$.

Proof.
(i) Suppose $p$ is identically zero. Choose any $j \in\{1, \ldots, n\}$ and let $f_{j}: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be a continuous function of compact support such that $f_{j}\left(x^{k}\right)=\delta_{j k}$ for $1 \leq k \leq n$. Then

$$
a_{j}=\sum_{k=1}^{n} a_{k} f_{j}\left(x^{k}\right)=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}} \sum_{k=1}^{n} a_{k} e^{i x^{k} \xi} \hat{f}_{j}(\xi) d \xi=0
$$

The converse is obvious.
(ii) Let $f: \mathcal{C}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{C}$ be an entire function and let

$$
Z=\left\{x \in \mathcal{R}^{d}: f(x)=0\right\}
$$

If $\operatorname{vol}_{d} Z$ is a set of positive Lebesgue measure in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$, then we shall prove that $f$ is identically zero, which implies the required result.

We proceed by induction on the dimension $d$. If $d=1$ and $\operatorname{vol}_{1} Z>0$, then $f$ is an entire function of one complex variable with uncountably many zeros. Such a function must vanish everywhere, because every uncountable subset of $\mathcal{C}$ possesses a limit point. Now suppose that the result is true for $d-1$ for some $d \geq 2$. Fubini's theorem provides the relation

$$
0<\operatorname{vol}_{d} Z=\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d-1}} \operatorname{vol}_{1} Z\left(x_{2}, \ldots, x_{d}\right) d x_{2} \ldots d x_{d}
$$

where

$$
Z\left(x_{2}, \ldots, x_{d}\right)=\left\{x_{1} \in \mathcal{R}:\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{d}\right) \in Z\right\}
$$

Thus there is a set, $X$ say, in $\mathcal{R}^{d-1}$ of positive $(d-1)$-dimensional Lebesgue measure such that $\operatorname{vol}_{1} Z\left(x_{2}, \ldots, x_{d}\right)$ is positive for every $\left(x_{2}, \ldots, x_{d}\right) \in X$, and therefore the entire function $\mathcal{C} \ni z \mapsto f\left(z, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{d}\right)$ vanishes for all $z \in \mathcal{C}$, because $Z\left(x_{2}, \ldots, x_{d}\right)$ is an uncountable set. Thus, choosing any $z_{1} \in \mathcal{C}$, we see that the entire function of $d-1$ complex variables defined by

$$
\left(z_{2}, \ldots, z_{d}\right) \mapsto f\left(z_{1}, z_{2}, \ldots, z_{d}\right), \quad\left(z_{2}, \ldots, z_{d}\right) \in \mathcal{C}^{d-1}
$$

vanishes for all $\left(z_{2}, \ldots, z_{d}\right)$ in $X$, which is a set of positive $(d-1)$ - dimensional Lebesgue measure. By induction hypothesis, we deduce that

$$
f\left(z_{1}, z_{2}, \ldots, z_{d}\right)=0 \text { for all } z_{2}, \ldots, z_{d} \in \mathcal{C}
$$

and since $z_{1}$ can be any complex number, we conclude that $f$ is identically zero. Therefore the lemma is true.

We can now derive our first bounds on the quadratic form (5.2.2). For any measurable function $g:[0,2 \pi]^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$, we recall the definitions of the essential supremum

$$
\begin{equation*}
\text { ess sup } g=\inf \left\{c \in \mathcal{R}: g(x) \leq c \text { for almost every } x \in[0,2 \pi]^{d}\right\} \tag{5.2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the essential infimum

$$
\begin{equation*}
\text { ess inf } g=\sup \left\{c \in \mathcal{R}: g(x) \geq c \text { for almost every } x \in[0,2 \pi]^{d}\right\} \tag{5.2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus (5.2.6) and the Parseval relation provide the inequalities

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{ess} \inf \sigma \sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}^{2} \leq \sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi\left(x^{j}-x^{k}\right) \leq \operatorname{ess} \sup \sigma \sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}^{2} . \tag{5.2.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $V$ be the vector space of real sequences $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ of finite support for which the function $\hat{F}$ of (5.2.3) is absolutely integrable. We have seen that (5.2.10) is valid for every element $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ of $V$. Of course, at this stage there is no guarantee that $V \neq\{0\}$ or that the bounds are finite. Nevertheless, we identify below a case when the bounds (5.2.10) cannot be improved. This will be of relevance later.

Proposition 5.2.2. Let $P$ be a nonzero trigonometric polynomial such that the principal ideal $\mathcal{I}$ generated by $P$, that is the set

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{I}=\{P T: T \text { a real trigonometric polynomial }\}, \tag{5.2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

consists of trigonometric polynomials whose Fourier coefficient sequences are elements of $V$. Further, suppose that there is a point $\eta$ at which $\sigma$ is continuous and $P(\eta) \neq 0$. Then we can find a sequence $\left\{\left(y_{j}^{(n)}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}: n=1,2, \ldots\right\}$ in $V$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}^{(n)} y_{k}^{(n)} \varphi(j-k) / \sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}\left[y_{j}^{(n)}\right]^{2}=\sigma(\eta) . \tag{5.2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. We recal Section 4 and recall that the $n$th degree tensor product Fejér kernel is defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
K_{n}(\xi):=\prod_{j=1}^{d} \frac{\sin ^{2} n \xi_{j} / 2}{n \sin ^{2} \xi_{j} / 2}=\left|n^{-d / 2} \sum_{\substack{k \notin \mathcal{Z}^{d} \\ 0 \leq k<e n}} e^{i k \xi}\right|^{2}=:\left|L_{n}(\xi)\right|^{2}, \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{5.2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $e=(1, \ldots, 1)^{T} \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$ and $L_{n}(\xi)=n^{-d / 2} \sum_{0 \leq k<e n} e^{i k \xi}$. Then the function $P(\cdot) L_{n}(\cdot-\eta)$ is a member of $\mathcal{I}$ and we choose $\left(y_{j}^{(n)}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ to be its Fourier coefficient sequence. The Parseval relation provides the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}\left[y_{j}^{(n)}\right]^{2}=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}} P^{2}(\xi) K_{n}(\xi-\eta) d \xi \tag{5.2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the approximate identity property of the Fejér kernel (Zygmund (1988), p.86) implies that

$$
\begin{align*}
P^{2}(\eta) & =\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}} P^{2}(\xi) K_{n}(\xi-\eta) d \xi \\
& =\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}\left[y_{j}^{(n)}\right]^{2} \tag{5.2.15}
\end{align*}
$$

Further, because $\sigma$ is continuous at $\eta$, we also have the relations

$$
\begin{align*}
P^{2}(\eta) \sigma(\eta) & =\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}} P^{2}(\xi) K_{n}(\xi-\eta) \sigma(\xi) d \xi \\
& =\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}^{(n)} y_{k}^{(n)} \varphi(j-k), \tag{5.2.16}
\end{align*}
$$

the last line being a consequence of (5.2.6). Hence (5.2.15) and (5.2.16) provide equation (5.2.12).

Corollary 5.2.3. If $\sigma$ attains its essential infimum (resp. supremum) at a point of continuity, and if we can find a trigonometric polynomial $P$ satisfying the conditions of Proposition 5.2.2, then the lower (resp. upper) bound of (5.2.10) cannot be improved.

Proof. This is an obvious consequence of Proposition 5.2.2.
We now specialize this general setting to the following case.
Definition 5.2.4. Let $G: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be a continuous absolutely integrable function such that $G(0)=1$ for which the Fourier transform is non-negative and absolutely integrable. Further, we require that there exist non-negative constants $C$ and $\kappa$ for which

$$
\begin{equation*}
|1-G(x)| \leq C\|x\|^{\kappa}, \quad x \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{5.2.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

We let $\mathcal{G}$ denote the class of all such functions $G$.
Clearly the Gaussian $G(x)=\exp \left(-\|x\|^{2}\right)$ provides an example of such a function. The next lemma mentions some salient properties of $\mathcal{G}$ which do not, however, require (5.2.17).

Lemma 5.2.5. Let $G \in \mathcal{G}$.
(i) $G$ is a symmetric function, that is

$$
\begin{equation*}
G(x)=G(-x), \quad x \in \mathcal{R}^{d} . \tag{5.2.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

(ii)

$$
\begin{equation*}
|G(x)| \leq 1, \quad x \in \mathcal{R}^{d} . \tag{5.2.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iii) $G$ is a positive definite function in the sense of Bochner. In other words, for any real sequence $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ of finite support, and for any points $\left(x^{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} G\left(x^{j}-x^{k}\right) \geq 0 \tag{5.2.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof.
(i) Since $\hat{G}$ is real-valued we have

$$
2 i \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}} G(x) \sin x \xi d x=\hat{G}(\xi)-\hat{G}(-\xi) \in \mathcal{R}, \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d}
$$

which is a contradiction unless both sides vanish. Thus $\hat{G}$ is a symmetric function. However, $G$ must inherit this symmetry, by the Fourier inversion theorem.
(ii) The non-negativity of $\hat{G}$ provides the relations

$$
|G(x)|=\left|(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}} \hat{G}(\xi) e^{-i x \xi} d \xi\right| \leq(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}} \hat{G}(\xi) d \xi=G(0)=1
$$

(iii) The condition $\hat{G} \in L^{1}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right)$ implies the validity of (5.2.5) for $\varphi$ replaced by $G$, whence

$$
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} G\left(x^{j}-x^{k}\right)=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} e^{i x^{j} \xi}\right|^{2} \hat{G}(\xi) d \xi \geq 0
$$

as required.

We remark that the first two parts of Lemma 5.2.5 are usually deduced from the requirement that $G$ be a positive definite function in the Bochner sense (see Katznelson (1976), p.137). We have presented our material in this order because it is the non-negativity condition on $\hat{G}$ which forms our starting point.

Given any $G \in \mathcal{G}$, we define the set $\mathcal{A}(G)$ of functions of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(x)=c+\int_{0}^{\infty}\left[1-G\left(t^{1 / 2} x\right)\right] t^{-1} d \alpha(t), \quad x \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{5.2.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $c$ is a constant and $\alpha:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ is a non-decreasing function such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{1}^{\infty} t^{-1} d \alpha(t)<\infty \text { and } \int_{0}^{1} t^{\kappa / 2-1} d \alpha(t)<\infty \tag{5.2.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let us show that (5.2.21) is well-defined. Inequality (5.2.19) implies the bound

$$
\int_{1}^{\infty}\left|1-G\left(t^{1 / 2} x\right)\right| t^{-1} d \alpha(t) \leq 2 \int_{1}^{\infty} t^{-1} d \alpha(t)<\infty
$$

Moreover, applying condition (5.2.17) we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{0}^{1}\left|1-G\left(t^{1 / 2} x\right)\right| t^{-1} d \alpha(t) \leq C\|x\|^{\kappa} \int_{0}^{1} t^{\kappa / 2-1} d \alpha(t)<\infty \tag{5.2.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore the integral of (5.2.21) is finite and $\varphi$ is a function of polynomial growth. A simple application of the dominated convergence theorem reveals that $\varphi$ is also continuous, so that we may view it as a tempered distribution.

The following definition is convenient.
Definition 5.2.6. We shall say that a real sequence $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ of finite support is zero-summing if $\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}=0$.

An important property of $\mathcal{A}(G)$ is that it consists of conditionally negative definite functions of order 1 on $\mathcal{R}^{d}$, that is whenever $\varphi \in \mathcal{A}(G)$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi\left(x^{j}-x^{k}\right) \leq 0 \tag{5.2.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

for every zero-summing sequence $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ and for any points $\left(x_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$. Indeed, (5.2.21) provides the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi\left(x^{j}-x^{k}\right)=-\int_{0}^{\infty} \sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} G\left(t^{1 / 2}\left(x^{j}-x^{k}\right)\right) t^{-1} d \alpha(t) \tag{5.2.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the right hand side is non-positive because $G$ is positive definite in the Bochner sense (Lemma 5.2.5 (iii)).

We now fix attention on a particular element $G \in \mathcal{G}$ and a function $\varphi \in$ $\mathcal{A}(G)$.

Theorem 5.2.7. Let $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ be a zero-summing sequence that is not identically zero. Then, for any points $\left(x^{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$, we have the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi\left(x^{j}-x^{k}\right)=-(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} e^{i x^{j} \xi}\right|^{2} H(\xi) d \xi \tag{5.2.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
H(\xi)=\int_{0}^{\infty} \hat{G}\left(\xi / t^{1 / 2}\right) t^{-d / 2-1} d \alpha(t), \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{5.2.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

Furthermore, this latter integral is finite for almost every $\xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$.

Proof. Applying the Fourier inversion theorem to $G$ in (5.2.25), we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
& \sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi\left(x^{j}-x^{k}\right) \\
= & -(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{0}^{\infty} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} \exp \left(i t^{1 / 2} \eta x^{j}\right)\right|^{2} \hat{G}(\eta) t^{-1} d \eta d \alpha(t) \\
= & -(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{0}^{\infty} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} e^{i x^{j} \xi}\right|^{2} \hat{G}\left(\xi / t^{1 / 2}\right) t^{-d / 2-1} d \xi d \alpha(t), \tag{5.2.28}
\end{align*}
$$

where we have used the substitution $\xi=t^{1 / 2} \eta$. Because the integrand in the last line is non-negative, we can exchange the order of integration to obtain (5.2.26). Of course the left hand side of (5.2.26) is finite, which implies that the integrand of (5.2.26) is an absolutely integrable function, and hence finite almost everywhere. But, by Lemma 5.2.1, $\left|\sum_{j} y_{j} e^{i x^{j} \xi}\right|^{2} \neq 0$ for almost every $\xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$ if the sequence $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ is non-zero. Therefore $H$ is finite almost everywhere.

Corollary 5.2.8. The hypotheses of Theorem 5.2.7 imply the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(x)=-(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} e^{i x^{j} \xi}\right|^{2} H(\xi) e^{i x \xi} d \xi, \quad x \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{5.2.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $F$ is given by (5.2.1). Consequently, $\hat{\varphi}(\xi)=-H(\xi)$ for almost every $\xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$, that is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\varphi}(\xi)=-\int_{0}^{\infty} \hat{G}\left(\xi / t^{1 / 2}\right) t^{-d / 2-1} d \alpha(t) \tag{5.2.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. It is straightforward to deduce the relation

$$
F(x)=-(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{0}^{\infty} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} e^{i x^{j} \xi}\right|^{2} e^{i x \xi} \hat{G}\left(\xi / t^{1 / 2}\right) t^{-d / 2-1} d \xi d \alpha(t)
$$

which is analogous to (5.2.28). Now the absolute value of this integrand is precisely the integrand in the second line of (5.2.28). Thus we may apply Fubini's theorem to exchange the order of integration, obtaining (5.2.29).

Next, we prove that $\xi \mapsto-\left|\sum_{j} y_{j} e^{i x^{j} \xi}\right|^{2} H(\xi)$ is the Fourier transform of $F$. Indeed, let $\psi: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be any smooth function whose partial derivatives enjoy supra-algebraic decay. It is sufficient (see Rudin (1973)) to show that

$$
\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}} \hat{\psi}(x) F(x) d x=-\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}} \psi(\xi)\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} e^{i x^{j} \xi}\right|^{2} H(\xi) d \xi
$$

Applying (5.2.29) and Fubini's theorem, we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}} \hat{\psi}(x) F(x) d x & =-(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}} \hat{\psi}(x)\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} e^{i x^{j} \xi}\right|^{2} e^{i x \xi} H(\xi) d \xi d x \\
& =-\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} e^{i x^{j} \xi}\right|^{2} H(\xi)\left((2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}} \hat{\psi}(x) e^{i x \xi} d x\right) d \xi \\
& =-\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} e^{i x^{j} \xi}\right|^{2} H(\xi) \psi(\xi) d \xi
\end{aligned}
$$

which establishes (5.2.30). However, we already know that the Fourier transform $\hat{F}(\xi)$ is almost everywhere equal to $\left|\sum_{j} y_{j} e^{i x^{j}} \xi\right|^{2} \hat{\varphi}(\xi)$. By Lemma 5.2.1, we know that $\sum_{j} y_{j} e^{i x^{j} \xi} \neq 0$ for almost all $\xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$, which implies that $\hat{\varphi}=-H$ almost everywhere.

### 5.3. Pólya frequency functions

For every real sequence $\left(a_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{\infty}$ and any non-negative constant $\gamma$ such that $0<$ $\gamma+\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} a_{j}^{2}<\infty$, we set

$$
\begin{equation*}
E(z)=e^{-\gamma z^{2}} \prod_{j=1}^{\infty}\left(1-a_{j}^{2} z^{2}\right), \quad z \in \mathcal{C} \tag{5.3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is an entire function which is nonzero in the vertical strip

$$
|\Re z|<\rho:=1 / \sup \left\{\left|a_{j}\right|: j=1,2, \ldots\right\} .
$$

It can be shown (Karlin (1968), Chapter 5) that there exists a continuous function $\Lambda: \mathcal{R} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{\mathcal{R}} \Lambda(t) e^{-z t} d t=\frac{1}{E(z)}, \quad|\Re z|<\rho . \tag{5.3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

This function $\Lambda$ is what Schoenberg (1951) calls a Pólya frequency function. We have restricted ourselves to functions $\Lambda$ which are even, that is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Lambda(t)=\Lambda(-t), \quad t \in \mathcal{R} \tag{5.3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Also, $E(0)=1$ implies that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{\mathcal{R}} \Lambda(t) d t=1 \tag{5.3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

According to (5.3.1) the Fourier transform of $\Lambda$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\Lambda}(\xi)=\frac{1}{E(i \xi)}=\frac{e^{-\gamma \xi^{2}}}{\prod_{j=1}^{\infty}\left(1+a_{j}^{2} \xi^{2}\right)}, \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R} \tag{5.3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

We see that $\Lambda(\cdot) / \Lambda(0)$ is a member of the set $\mathcal{G}$ described in Definition 5.2.4 for $d=1$, and therefore Lemma 5.2.5 is applicable. In particular,

$$
\begin{equation*}
|\Lambda(t)| \leq \Lambda(0), \quad t \in \mathcal{R} \tag{5.3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

However, much more than (5.3.6) is true. Schoenberg (1951) proved that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{det}\left(\Lambda\left(x_{j}-y_{k}\right)\right)_{j, k=1}^{n} \geq 0 \tag{5.3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

whenever $x_{1}<\cdots<x_{n}$ and $y_{1}<\cdots<y_{n}$. This fact will be used in an essential way in Section 5.4. For the moment we use it to improve (5.3.6) to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Lambda(t) \in[0, \Lambda(0)], \quad t \in \mathcal{R} \tag{5.3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\mathcal{P}$ denote the class of functions $\Lambda: \mathcal{R} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ that satisfy (5.3.2) for some $\gamma \geq 0$ and sequence $\left(a_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{\infty}$ satisfying $0<\gamma+\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} a_{j}^{2}<\infty$. For any positive $a$ the function

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{a}(t)=\frac{1}{2|a|} e^{-|t / a|}, \quad t \in \mathcal{R} \tag{5.3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

is in $\mathcal{P}$ since

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{\mathcal{R}} S_{a}(t) e^{-z t} d t=\frac{1}{1-a^{2} z^{2}}, \quad|\Re z|<1 / a \tag{5.3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\mathcal{E}=\left\{S_{a}: a>0\right\}$. These are the only elements of $\mathcal{P}$ that are not in $C^{2}(\mathcal{R})$, because all other members of $\mathcal{P}$ have the property that $\hat{\Lambda}(t)=\mathcal{O}\left(t^{-4}\right)$ as $|t| \rightarrow \infty$. Hence there exists a constant $\kappa$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
|\Lambda(0)-\Lambda(t)| \leq \kappa t^{2}, \quad \text { for } t \in \mathcal{R} \text { and } \Lambda \in \mathcal{P} \backslash \mathcal{E} \tag{5.3.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

or

$$
\begin{equation*}
|\Lambda(0)-\Lambda(t)| \leq \kappa|t|, \quad t \in \mathcal{R}, \quad \Lambda \in \mathcal{E} \tag{5.3.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

We note also that every element of $\mathcal{P}$ decays exponentially for large argument (see Karlin (1968), p. 332).

We are now ready to define the multivariate class of functions which interest us. Choose any $\Lambda_{1}, \ldots, \Lambda_{d} \in \mathcal{P}$ and define

$$
\begin{equation*}
G(x)=\prod_{j=1}^{d} \frac{\Lambda_{j}\left(x_{j}\right)}{\Lambda_{j}(0)}, \quad x=\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{d}\right) \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{5.3.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

According to (5.3.11) and (5.3.12), there is a constant $C \geq 0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
1-G(x) \leq C\|x\|_{2}^{2} \tag{5.3.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $\Lambda_{j} \notin \mathcal{E}$ for every factor $\Lambda_{j}$ in (5.3.11). However, if $\Lambda_{j} \in \mathcal{E}$ for every $j$, then we only have

$$
\begin{equation*}
1-G(x) \leq C\|x\|_{2}, \tag{5.3.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some constant $C$. We are unable to study the general behaviour at this time. Remarking that the Fourier transform of $G$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{G}(\xi)=\prod_{j=1}^{d} \frac{\hat{\Lambda}_{j}\left(\xi_{j}\right)}{\Lambda_{j}(0)}, \quad \xi=\left(\xi_{1}, \ldots, \xi_{d}\right) \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{5.3.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

we conclude that $G$ is a member of the class $\mathcal{G}$ of Definition 5.2.4. Moreover, we can now construct the set $\mathcal{A}(G)$. To this end, let $\alpha:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be a non-decreasing function such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{1}^{\infty} t^{-1} d \alpha(t)<\infty \tag{5.3.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

and for any constant $c \in \mathcal{R}$ define $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ by (5.2.21). Thus we see that as long as we require the measure $d \alpha$ to satisfy the extra condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{0}^{1} t^{-1 / 2} d \alpha(t)<\infty \tag{5.3.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

whenever one of the factors in (5.3.11) is an element of $\mathcal{E}$, then $\varphi$ is a continuous function of polynomial growth and the results of Section 2 apply. We let $\mathcal{C}$ denote the class of all such functions, for all $G \in \mathcal{G}$.

Let us note that $\mathcal{C}$ contains the following important subclass of functions. In 1938 , I. J. Schoenberg proved that a continuous radially symmetric function $\varphi: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ is conditionally negative definite of order 1 on every $\mathcal{R}^{d}$ if and only if it has the form

$$
\varphi(x)=\varphi(0)+\int_{0}^{\infty}\left(1-\exp \left(-t\|x\|^{2}\right)\right) t^{-1} d \alpha(t), \quad x \in \mathcal{R}^{d}
$$

where $\alpha:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ is a non-decreasing function satisfying (5.3.17). In this case, the Gaussian is clearly of the form (5.3.13), implying that we do indeed have a subclass of $\mathcal{C}$. Thus we have established Theorem 5.2.7 and Corollary 5.2.8 under weaker conditions than those assumed in Chapter 4.

Our class $\mathcal{C}$ also contains functions of the form

$$
\varphi(x)=c+\int_{0}^{\infty}\left(1-\exp \left(-t^{1 / 2}\|x\|_{1}\right)\right) t^{-1} d \alpha(t), \quad x \in \mathcal{R}^{d}
$$

where $\alpha:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ is a non-decreasing function satisfying (5.3.17) and (5.3.18), and $\|x\|_{1}=\sum_{j=1}^{d}\left|x_{j}\right|$ for $x=\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{d}\right) \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$. For instance, using the easily verified formula

$$
\frac{\gamma}{\Gamma(1+2 \gamma)} \int_{0}^{\infty}\left(1-e^{-t^{1 / 2} \sigma}\right) t^{\gamma-1} e^{-\delta t^{1 / 2}} d t=\delta^{-2 \gamma}-(\delta+\sigma)^{-2 \gamma}
$$

which is valid for $\delta \geq 0$ and $-1 / 2<\gamma<0$, we see that $\varphi(x)=\left(\delta+\|x\|_{1}\right)^{\tau}$, for $\delta \geq 0$ and $0<\tau<1$, is in our class $\mathcal{C}$.

Although it is not central to our interests in this section, we will discuss some additional properties of the Fourier transform of a function $\varphi \in \mathcal{C}$. First, observe that (5.3.5) implies that $\hat{\Lambda}$ is a decreasing function on $[0, \infty)$ for every $\Lambda$ in $\mathcal{P}$. Consequently every $G \in \mathcal{G}$ satisfies the inequality $\hat{G}(\xi) \leq \hat{G}(\eta)$ for $\xi \geq \eta \geq 0$. This property is inherited by the function $H$ of (5.2.27), that is

$$
\begin{equation*}
H(\xi) \leq H(\eta) \text { whenever } \xi \geq \eta \geq 0 \tag{5.3.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

which allows us to strengthen Theorem 5.2.7.
Proposition 5.3.1. $H$ is continuous on $(\mathcal{R} \backslash\{0\})^{d}$.

Proof. We first show that $H$ is finite on $(\mathcal{R} \backslash\{0\})^{d}$. We already know that $\hat{\varphi}=-H$ almost everywhere, which implies that every set of positive measure contains a point at which $H$ is finite. In particular, let $\delta$ be a positive number and set $U_{\delta}=$ $\left\{\xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d}: 0<\xi_{j}<\delta, \quad j=1, \ldots, d\right\}$. Thus there is a point $\eta \in U_{\delta}$ such that $H(\eta)<\infty$. Applying (5.3.19) and recalling that $H$ is a symmetric function, we deduce the inequality

$$
\begin{equation*}
H(\xi) \leq H(\eta)<\infty, \quad \xi \in F_{\delta} \tag{5.3.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $F_{\delta}:=\left\{\xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d}:\left|\xi_{j}\right| \geq \delta, \quad j=1, \ldots, d\right\}$. Since $\delta>0$ is arbitrary, we see that $H$ is finite in $(\mathcal{R} \backslash\{0\})^{d}$.

To prove that $H$ is continuous in $F_{\delta}$, let $\left(\xi_{n}\right)_{n=1}^{\infty}$ be a convergent sequence in $F_{\delta}$ with limit $\xi_{\infty}$. By (5.3.20), the functions

$$
\left\{t \mapsto \hat{G}\left(\xi_{n} t^{-1 / 2}\right) t^{-d / 2-1}: n=1,2, \ldots\right\}
$$

are absolutely integrable on $[0, \infty)$ with respect to the measure $d \alpha$. Moreover, they are dominated by the $d \alpha$-integrable function $t \mapsto \hat{G}\left(\eta t^{-1 / 2}\right) t^{-d / 2-1}$. Finally, the continuity of $\hat{G}$ provides the equation

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \hat{G}\left(\xi_{n} t^{-1 / 2}\right) t^{-d / 2-1}=\hat{G}\left(\xi_{\infty} t^{-1 / 2}\right) t^{-d / 2-1}, \quad t \in[0, \infty)
$$

and thus $\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} H\left(\xi_{n}\right)=H\left(\xi_{\infty}\right)$ by the dominated convergence theorem. Since $\delta$ was an arbitrary positive number, we conclude that $H$ is continuous on ( $\mathcal{R} \backslash$ $\{0\})^{d}$.

The remainder of this section requires a distinction of cases. The first case (Case I) is the nicest. This occurs when every factor $\Lambda_{j}$ in (5.3.13) has a positive exponent $\gamma_{j}$ in the Fourier transform formula (5.3.5). We let Case II denote the contrary case. Our investigation of Case II is not yet complete, so we shall concentrate on Case I for the remainder of this section.

For Case I we have the bound

$$
\hat{G}(\xi) \leq e^{-\left(\gamma_{1} \xi_{1}^{2}+\cdots+\gamma_{d} \xi_{d}^{2}\right)}, \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d}
$$

which implies the limit

$$
\lim _{t \rightarrow 0} \hat{G}\left(\xi t^{-1 / 2}\right) t^{-d / 2-1}=0, \quad \xi \neq 0
$$

Thus the function $t \mapsto \hat{G}\left(\xi t^{-1 / 2}\right) t^{-d / 2-1}$ is continuous for $t \in[0, \infty)$ when $\xi$ is nonzero, which implies that

$$
\int_{0}^{1} \hat{G}\left(\xi t^{-1 / 2}\right) t^{-d / 2-1} d \alpha(t)<\infty, \quad \xi \neq 0
$$

Moreover, since

$$
\int_{1}^{\infty} \hat{G}\left(\xi t^{-1 / 2}\right) t^{-d / 2-1} d \alpha(t) \leq \int_{1}^{\infty} t^{-1} d \alpha(t)<\infty
$$

we have $H(\xi)<\infty$ for every $\xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash\{0\}$. Finally, a simple extension of the proof of Proposition 5.3 .1 shows that $H$ is continuous on $\mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash\{0\}$.

In fact, we can prove that for $H \in C^{\infty}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash\{0\}\right)$ in Case I. We observe that it is sufficient to show that every derivative of $\hat{G}\left(\xi t^{-1 / 2}\right) t^{-d / 2-1}$ with respect to $\xi$ is an absolutely integrable function with respect to the measure $d \alpha$ on $[0, \infty)$, because then we are justified in differentiating under the integral sign. Next, the form of $\hat{G}$ implies that we only need to show that every derivative of $\hat{\Lambda}$, where $\hat{\Lambda}$ is given by (5.3.13) and $\gamma>0$, enjoys faster than algebraic decay for large argument. To this end we claim that for every $C<\rho:=1 / \sup \left\{\left|a_{j}\right|: j=1,2, \ldots\right\}$ there is a constant $D$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
|\hat{\Lambda}(\xi+i \eta)| \leq D e^{-\gamma \xi^{2}}, \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}, \quad|\eta| \leq C \tag{5.3.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

To verify the claim, observe that when $|\eta| \leq C \leq|\xi|$ we have the inequalities

$$
\left|e^{-\gamma(\xi+i \eta)^{2}}\right| \leq e^{C^{2} \gamma} e^{-\gamma \xi^{2}} \text { and }\left|1+a_{j}^{2}(\xi+i \eta)^{2}\right| \geq 1+a_{j}^{2}\left(\xi^{2}-\eta^{2}\right) \geq 1
$$

Thus, setting $M=\max \left\{|\hat{\Lambda}(\xi+i \eta)| e^{\gamma \xi^{2}}:|\xi| \leq C,|\eta| \leq C\right\}$, we conclude that $D:=\max \left\{M, e^{C^{2} \gamma}\right\}$ is suitable in (5.3.21). Finally, we apply the Cauchy integral formula to estimate the $k$ th derivative. We have

$$
\hat{\Lambda}^{(k)}(\xi)=\frac{1}{2 \pi i} \int_{\Gamma} \frac{\hat{\Lambda}(\zeta)}{(\zeta-\xi)^{k+1}} d \zeta
$$

where $\Gamma:[0,2 \pi] \rightarrow \mathcal{C}$ is given by $\Gamma(t)=r e^{i t}$ and $r<C$ is a constant. Consequently we have the bound

$$
\left|\hat{\Lambda}^{(k)}(\xi)\right| \leq\left(D / \alpha^{k}\right) e^{-\gamma \min \left\{(\xi-r)^{2},(\xi+r)^{2}\right\}}, \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}
$$

and the desired supra-algebraic decay is established. We now state this formally.
Proposition 5.3.2. In Case I, the function $H$ of (5.2.27) is smooth for nonzero argument.

Next, to identify $-H$ with $\hat{\varphi}$ on $\mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash\{0\}$ in Case I, we let $\psi: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be a smooth function whose support is a compact subset of $\mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash\{0\}$. By definition we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle\hat{\varphi}, \psi\rangle=\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}} \hat{\psi}(x) \varphi(x) d x \tag{5.3.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle$ denotes the action of a tempered distribution on a test function (see Schwartz (1966)). Substituting the expression for $\varphi$ given by (5.2.21) into the right hand side of (5.3.22) and using the fact that

$$
\begin{equation*}
0=\psi(0)=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}} \hat{\psi}(\xi) d \xi \tag{5.3.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

gives

$$
\langle\hat{\varphi}, \psi\rangle=-\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left(\int_{0}^{\infty} \hat{\psi}(x)\left(1-G\left(t^{1 / 2} x\right)\right) t^{-1} d \alpha(t)\right) d x
$$

We want to swap the order of integration here. This will be justified by Fubini's theorem if we can show that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left(\int_{0}^{\infty}|\hat{\psi}(x)|\left(1-G\left(t^{1 / 2} x\right)\right) t^{-1} d \alpha(t)\right) d x<\infty \tag{5.3.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

We defer the proof of (5.3.24) to Lemma 5.3.3 below and press on. Swapping the order of integration and recalling (5.3.23) yields

$$
\begin{aligned}
\langle\hat{\varphi}, \psi\rangle & =-\int_{0}^{\infty}\left(\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}} \hat{\psi}(x) G\left(t^{1 / 2} x\right) d x\right) t^{-1} d \alpha(t) \\
& =-\int_{0}^{\infty}\left(\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}} \psi(\xi) \hat{G}\left(\xi t^{-1 / 2}\right) d \xi\right) t^{-d / 2-1} d \alpha(t)
\end{aligned}
$$

using Parseval's relation in the last line. Once again, we want to swap the order of integration and, as before, this is justified by Fubini's theorem if a certain integral is finite, specifically

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{0}^{\infty}\left(\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}|\psi(\xi)| \hat{G}\left(\xi t^{-1 / 2}\right) d \xi\right) t^{-d / 2-1} d \alpha(t)<\infty \tag{5.3.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

The proof of (5.3.25) will also be found in Lemma 5.3.3 below. After swapping the order of integration we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle\hat{\varphi}, \psi\rangle=-\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}} \psi(\xi) H(\xi) d \xi \tag{5.3.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies that $\hat{\varphi}=-H$ in $\mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash\{0\}$.
Lemma 5.3.3. Inequalities (5.3.24) and (5.3.25) are valid in Case I.
Proof. For (5.3.24), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left(\int_{0}^{\infty}|\hat{\psi}(x)|\left(1-G\left(t^{1 / 2} x\right)\right) t^{-1} d \alpha(t)\right) d x \\
& \quad \leq \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left(\kappa \int_{0}^{1}|\hat{\psi}(x)|\|x\|^{2} d \alpha(t)\right) d x+\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left(\int_{1}^{\infty}|\hat{\psi}(x)| t^{-1} d \alpha(t)\right) d x \\
& \left.\quad=\kappa(\alpha(1)-\alpha(0)) \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}|\hat{\psi}(x)|\|x\|^{2} d x+\left(\int_{1}^{\infty} t^{-1}\right], d \alpha(t)\right)\left(\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}|\hat{\psi}(x)| d x\right) \\
& \quad<\infty
\end{aligned}
$$

recalling that $\hat{\psi}$ must enjoy faster than algebraic decay because $\psi$ is a smooth function.

For (5.3.25), the substitution $\eta=\xi t^{-1 / 2}$ provides the integral

$$
I:=\int_{0}^{\infty}\left(\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\psi\left(\eta t^{1 / 2}\right)\right| \hat{G}(\eta) d \eta\right) t^{-1} d \alpha(t)
$$

Now there is a constant $D$ such that $|\psi(y)| \leq D\|y\|^{2}$ for every $y \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$, because the support of $\psi$ is a closed subset of $\mathcal{R}^{d} \backslash\{0\}$. Hence

$$
\begin{aligned}
I & \leq \int_{0}^{1} D\left(\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}} \hat{G}(\eta)\|\eta\|^{2} d \eta\right) d \alpha(t)+(2 \pi)^{d} G(0)\|\psi\|_{\infty} \int_{1}^{\infty} t^{-1} d \alpha(t) \\
& <\infty
\end{aligned}
$$

The proof is complete.

### 5.4. Lower bounds on eigenvalues

Let $\varphi: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be a member of $\mathcal{C}$ and let $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ be a zero-summing sequence. An immediate consequence of (5.2.26) is the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi(j-k)=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} e^{i j \xi}\right|^{2} \hat{\varphi}(\xi) d \xi \tag{5.4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\hat{\varphi}(\xi)=-H(\xi)$ for almost all $\xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$ and $H$ is given by (5.2.27). Moreover, (5.2.6) is valid, that is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi(j-k)=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi] d}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} e^{i j \xi}\right|^{2} \sigma(\xi) d \xi \tag{5.4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\sigma$ is given by (5.2.7). Applying (5.2.30), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
|\sigma(\xi)| & =\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}|\hat{\varphi}(\xi+2 \pi k)| \\
& =\int_{0}^{\infty} \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \hat{G}\left(t^{-1 / 2}(\xi+2 \pi k)\right) t^{-d / 2-1} d \alpha(t) . \tag{5.4.3}
\end{align*}
$$

As in Section 2, we consider essential upper and lower bounds on $\sigma$. Let us begin this study by fixing $t>0$ and analysing the function

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tau(\xi)=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \hat{G}\left(t^{-1 / 2}(\xi+2 \pi k)\right), \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{5.4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (5.3.14), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tau(\xi)=\prod_{j=1}^{d} \frac{E_{j}\left(\xi_{j}\right)}{\Lambda_{j}(0)}, \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{5.4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{j}(x)=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}} \hat{\Lambda}_{j}\left((x+2 \pi k) t^{-1 / 2}\right), \quad x \in \mathcal{R}, \quad j=1, \ldots, d \tag{5.4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

We now employ the following key lemma.
Lemma 5.4.1. Let $\Lambda \in \mathcal{P}$ and let

$$
E(x)=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}} \hat{\Lambda}\left((x+2 \pi k) t^{-1 / 2}\right), \quad x \in \mathcal{R}
$$

Then $E$ is an even function and $E(0) \geq E(x) \geq E(y) \geq E(\pi)$ for every $x$ and $y$ in $\mathcal{R}$ with $0 \leq x \leq y \leq \pi$.

Proof. The exponential decay of $\Lambda$ and the absolute integrability of $\hat{\Lambda}$ imply that the Poisson summation formula is valid, which gives the relation

$$
\begin{equation*}
E(x)=t^{1 / 2} \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}} \Lambda\left(k t^{1 / 2}\right) e^{i k x}, \quad x \in \mathcal{R} \tag{5.4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now the sequence $a_{k}:=\Lambda\left(k t^{1 / 2}\right), k \in \mathcal{Z}$, is an even, exponentially decaying Pólya frequency sequence, that is every minor of the Toeplitz matrix $\left(a_{j-k}\right)_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}}$ is non-negative definite (and we see that this is a consequence of (5.3.7)). By a result of Edrei (1953), $\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}} a_{k} z^{k}$ is a meromorphic function on an annulus $\{z \in \mathcal{C}: 1 / R \leq|z| \leq R\}$, for some $R>1$, and enjoys an infinite product expansion of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}} a_{k} z^{k}=C e^{\lambda\left(z+z^{-1}\right)} \prod_{j=1}^{\infty} \frac{\left(1+\alpha_{j} z\right)\left(1+\alpha_{j} z^{-1}\right)}{\left(1-\beta_{j} z\right)\left(1-\beta_{j} z^{-1}\right)}, \quad z \neq 0 \tag{5.4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $C \geq 0, \lambda \geq 0,0<\alpha_{j}, \beta_{j}<1$ and $\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \alpha_{j}+\beta_{j}<\infty$. Hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
E(x)=C t^{1 / 2} e^{2 \lambda \cos x} \prod_{j=1}^{\infty} \frac{1+2 \alpha_{j} \cos x+\alpha_{j}^{2}}{1-2 \beta_{j} \cos x+\beta_{j}^{2}}, \quad x \in \mathcal{R} \tag{5.4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Observe that each term in the product is an even function which is decreasing on $[0,2 \pi]$, which provides the required inequality.

In particular, $E_{j}(x) \geq E_{j}(\pi)$ for $j=1, \ldots, d$, where $E_{j}$ is given by (5.4.6). Hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tau(\xi) \geq \tau(\pi e), \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{5.4.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

and applying (5.4.3) we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
|\sigma(\xi)| \geq|\sigma(\pi e)|, \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{5.4.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

We now come to our principal result.
Theorem 5.4.2. Let $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$ be a zero-summing sequence and let $\varphi \in \mathcal{C}$. Then we have the inequality

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{k} y_{k} \varphi(j-k)\right| \geq|\sigma(\pi e)| \sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}^{2} \tag{5.4.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Equation (5.4.2) and the Parseval relation provide the inequality

$$
\left|\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{k} y_{k} \varphi(j-k)\right| \geq|\sigma(\pi e)|(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} e^{i j \xi}\right|^{2} d \xi=|\sigma(\pi e)| \sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j}^{2},
$$

as in inequality (5.2.10).

Of course, we are interested in showing that (5.4.12) cannot be improved, that is $|\sigma(\pi e)|$ cannot be replaced by a larger number independent of $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}$. Recalling Proposition 5.2.2, this is true if $\sigma$ is continuous at $\pi e$. In fact, we can use Lemma 5.4.1 to prove that $\sigma$ is continuous everywhere in the set $(0,2 \pi)^{d}$. We first collect some necessary preliminary results.

Lemma 5.4.3. The function $\tau$ given by (5.4.4) is continous for every $t>0$ and satisfies the inequality

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tau(\xi) \leq \tau(\eta) \text { for } 0 \leq \eta \leq \xi \leq \pi e \tag{5.4.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Furthermore,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tau(\pi e+\xi)=\tau(\pi e-\xi) \text { for all } \xi \in(-\pi, \pi)^{d} \tag{5.4.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. The definition of $G$, (5.4.5) and (5.4.7) provide the Fourier series

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tau(\xi)=t^{d / 2} \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} G\left(k t^{1 / 2}\right) e^{i k \xi}, \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{5.4.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the exponential decay of $G$ implies the uniform convergence of this series. Hence $\tau$ is continuous, being the uniform limit of the finite sections of (5.4.15).

Applying the product formula (5.4.5) and Lemma 5.4.1, we obtain (5.4.13) and (5.4.14).

Proposition 5.4.4. $\sigma$ is continuous on $(0,2 \pi)^{d}$.
Proof. Equation (5.4.2) implies that $\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} y_{j} e^{i j \xi}\right|^{2}|\sigma(\xi)|<\infty$ for almost every $\xi \in[0,2 \pi]^{d}$. Consequently, $\sigma$ is finite almost everywhere, by Lemma 5.2.1. Thus every non-empty open subset of $[0,2 \pi]^{d}$ contains a point at which $\sigma$ is finite.

Specifically, let $\delta \in(0, \pi)$ and define the closed set $K_{\delta}:=[\delta, 2 \pi-\delta]^{d}$. Thus the open set $[0,2 \pi]^{d} \backslash K_{\delta}$ contains a point, $\eta$ say, for which

$$
\begin{equation*}
\infty>|\sigma(\eta)|=\int_{0}^{\infty} \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \hat{G}\left((\eta+2 \pi k) t^{-1 / 2}\right) t^{-d / 2-1} d \alpha(t) \tag{5.4.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let us show that $\sigma$ is continuous in $K_{\delta}$. To this end, choose any convergent sequence $\left(\xi_{n}\right)_{n=1}^{\infty}$ in $K_{\delta}$ and let $\xi_{\infty}$ denote its limit. We must prove that

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \sigma\left(\xi_{n}\right)=\sigma\left(\xi_{\infty}\right)
$$

Now Lemma 5.4.3 and (5.4.16) supply the bound

$$
\left|\sigma\left(\xi_{n}\right)\right| \leq|\sigma(\eta)|<\infty, \quad n=1,2, \ldots
$$

that is the functions

$$
\left\{t \mapsto \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \hat{G}\left(\left(\xi_{n}+2 \pi k\right) t^{-1 / 2}\right) t^{-d / 2-1} d \alpha(t): n=1,2, \ldots\right\}
$$

are absolutely integrable on $[0, \infty)$ with respect to the measure $d \alpha$. Moreover, they are dominated by the absolutely integrable function $t \mapsto \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \hat{G}((\eta+$ $\left.2 \pi k) t^{-1 / 2}\right) t^{-d / 2-1}$. However, the continuity of $\tau$ proved in Lemma 5.4.3 allows to deduce that

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \hat{G}\left(\left(\xi_{n}+2 \pi k\right) t^{-1 / 2}\right) t^{-d / 2-1}=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \hat{G}\left(\left(\xi_{\infty}+2 \pi k\right) t^{-1 / 2}\right) t^{-d / 2-1}
$$

for all positive $t$. Thus the dominated convergence theorem implies that $\sigma\left(\xi_{n}\right) \rightarrow$ $\sigma\left(\xi_{\infty}\right)$ as $n$ tends to infinity. Since $\delta \in(0, \pi)$ was arbitrary, we conclude that $\sigma$ is continuous in all of $(0,2 \pi)^{d}$.

Corollary 5.4.5. Inequality (5.4.12) cannot be improved for $\varphi \in \mathcal{C}$ if we can find a trigonometric polynomial $P$ satisfying the conditions of Proposition 5.2.2 at the point $\pi e$.

Proof. We simply apply Proposition 5.5.2.

### 5.5. Total positivity and the Gaussian cardinal function

This material is not directly related to the earlier sections of this chapter, but it does use a total positivity property to deduce an interesting fact concerning infinity norms of Gaussian distance matrices generated by infinite regular grids.

Let $\lambda$ be a positive constant and let $\varphi: \mathcal{R} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be the Gaussian

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(x)=\exp \left(-\lambda x^{2}\right), \quad x \in \mathcal{R} \tag{5.5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

It is known (see Buhmann (1990)) that there exists a real sequence $\left(c_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathcal{Z}}$ such that $\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}} c_{k}^{2}<\infty$ and the function $\chi: \mathcal{R} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\chi(x)=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}} c_{k} \varphi(x-k), \quad x \in \mathcal{R} \tag{5.5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

satisfies the equation

$$
\chi(j)=\delta_{0 j}, \quad j \in \mathcal{Z}
$$

Thus $\chi$ is the cardinal function of interpolation for the Gaussian radial basis function.

Proposition 5.5.1. The coefficients $\left(c_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathcal{Z}}$ of the cardinal function $\chi$ alternate in sign, that is $(-1)^{k} c_{k} \geq 0$ for every integer $k$.

Proof. For each non-negative integer $n$, we let

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{n}=(\varphi(j-k))_{j, k=-n}^{n} . \tag{5.5.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now $A_{n}$ is an invertible totally positive matrix, which implies that $A_{n}^{-1}$ enjoys the "chequerboard" property, that is the elements of the inverse matrix satisfy $(-1)^{j+k}\left(A_{n}^{-1}\right)_{j k} \geq 0$, for $j, k=-n, \ldots, n$. In particular, if we let

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{k}^{(n)}=\left(A_{n}^{-1}\right)_{0 k}, \quad k=-n, \ldots, n, \tag{5.5.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

then $(-1)^{k} c_{k}^{(n)} \geq 0$ and the definition of $A_{n}^{-1}$ provides the equations

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{k=-n}^{n} c_{k}^{(n)} \varphi(j-k)=\delta_{0 j}, \quad j=-n, \ldots, n \tag{5.5.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

In other words, the function $\chi_{n}: \mathcal{R} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\chi_{n}(x)=\sum_{k=-n}^{n} c_{k}^{(n)} \varphi(x-k), \quad x \in \mathcal{R}, \tag{5.5.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

provides the cardinal function of interpolation for the finite set $\{-n, \ldots, n\}$.
Now Theorem 9 of Buhmann and Micchelli (1991) provides the following useful fact relating the coefficients of $\chi_{n}$ and $\chi$ :

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} c_{k}^{(n)}=c_{k}, \quad k \in \mathcal{Z}
$$

Thus the property $(-1)^{k} c_{k}^{(n)} \geq 0$ implies the required condition $(-1)^{k} c_{k} \geq 0$.

We now consider the bi-infinite symmetric Toeplitz matrix $A=(\varphi(j-$ $k))_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}}$ as a bounded linear operator $A: \ell^{p}(\mathcal{Z}) \rightarrow \ell^{p}(\mathcal{Z})$ when $p \geq 1$. Thus $A^{-1}=$ $\left(c_{j-k}\right)_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}}$, where the $\left(c_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}}$ are given by (5.5.2), and a theorem of Buhmann (1990) provides the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{k}=(2 \pi)^{-1} \int_{0}^{2 \pi} \frac{1}{\sigma(\xi)} e^{-i k \xi} d \xi, \quad k \in \mathcal{Z} \tag{5.5.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma(\xi)=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}} \hat{\varphi}(\xi+2 \pi k), \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R} \tag{5.5.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore, using standard results of Toeplitz operator theory (Grenander and Szegő (1984)), we obtain the expression

$$
\left\|A^{-1}\right\|_{2}=\max \left\{\frac{1}{\sigma(\xi)}: \xi \in[0,2 \pi]\right\}
$$

Applying Lemma 4.2.7, we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|A^{-1}\right\|_{2}=\frac{1}{\sigma(\pi)}=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}}(-1)^{k} c_{k} \tag{5.5.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

But Proposition 5.5.1 and the symmetry of $A$ provide the relations

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|A^{-1}\right\|_{1}=\left\|A^{-1}\right\|_{\infty}=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}}\left|c_{k}\right|=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}}(-1)^{k} c_{k} \tag{5.5.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that $A^{-1}$ provides a nontrivial linear operator on $\ell^{p}(\mathcal{Z})$, for $p=1,2$, and $\infty$, whose norms agree on each of these sequence spaces. Further, we recall that $\log \left\|A^{-1}\right\|_{p}$ is a convex function of $1 / p$ for $p \geq 1$, which is a consequence of the Riesz-Thorin theorem (Hardy et al (1952), pp. 214, 219). Hence we have proved the interesting fact that $\left\|A^{-1}\right\|_{p}=\left\|A^{-1}\right\|_{1}$ for all $p \geq 1$.

In the multivariate case, the cardinal function is given by expressions analogous to (5.5.2) and (5.5.7). Specifically, we let $\varphi(x)=\exp \left(-\lambda\|x\|^{2}\right), x \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$, and then $\chi: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}^{d}$ is defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\chi(x)=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} c_{k}^{(d)} \varphi(x-k), \quad x \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{5.5.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{k}^{(d)}=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[0,2 \pi]^{d}} \frac{1}{\sigma^{(d)}(\xi)} e^{-i k \xi} d \xi, \quad k=\left(k_{1}, \ldots, k_{d}\right) \in \mathcal{Z}^{d} \tag{5.5.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma^{(d)}(\xi)=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \hat{\varphi}(\xi+2 \pi k) \tag{5.5.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

The key point is that $\varphi$ is a tensor product of univariate functions, which implies the relation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma^{(d)}(\xi)=\prod_{j=1}^{d} \sigma\left(\xi_{j}\right), \quad \xi=\left(\xi_{1}, \ldots, \xi_{d}\right) \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{5.5.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\sigma$ is given by (5.5.8). Consequently the coefficients of the multivariate cardinal function are related to those of the univariate cardinal function by the formula

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{k}^{(d)}=\prod_{j=1}^{d} c_{k_{j}}, \quad k=\left(k_{1}, \ldots, k_{d}\right) \in \mathcal{Z}^{d} \tag{5.5.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

In particular, the following corollary is an immediate consequence of Proposition 5.5.1.

Corollary 5.5.2. $(-1)^{k_{1}+\cdots+k_{d}} c_{k}^{(d)} \geq 0$ for every integer $k=\left(k_{1}, \ldots, k_{d}\right) \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}$.

## 6 : Norm Estimates and Preconditioned Conjugate Gradients

### 6.1. Introduction

Let $n$ be a positive integer and let $A_{n}$ be the symmetric Toeplitz matrix given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{n}=(\varphi(j-k))_{j, k=-n}^{n}, \tag{6.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\varphi: \mathcal{R} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ is either a Gaussian $\left(\varphi(x)=\exp \left(-\lambda x^{2}\right)\right.$ for some positive constant $\lambda$ ) or a multiquadric $\left(\varphi(x)=\left(x^{2}+c^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}\right.$ for some real constant $\left.c\right)$. In this section we construct efficient preconditioners for the conjugate gradient solution of the linear system

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{n} x=f, \quad f \in \mathcal{R}^{2 n+1}, \tag{6.1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

when $\varphi$ is a Gaussian, or the augmented linear system

$$
\begin{array}{r}
A_{n} x+e y=f, \\
e^{T} x=0, \tag{6.1.3}
\end{array}
$$

when $\varphi$ is a multiquadric. Here $e=[1,1, \ldots, 1]^{T} \in \mathcal{R}^{2 n+1}$ and $y \in \mathcal{R}$. Section 6.2 describes the construction for the Gaussian and Section 6.3 deals with the multiquadric. Of course, we exploit the Toeplitz structure of $A_{n}$ to perform a matrix-vector multiplication in $\mathcal{O}(n \log n)$ operations whilst storing $\mathcal{O}(n)$ real numbers. Further, we shall see numerically that the number of iterations required to achieve a solution of (6.1.2) or (6.1.3) to within a given tolerance is independent of $n$.

Our method applies to many other radial basis functions, such as the inverse multiquadric $\left(\varphi(x)=\left(x^{2}+c^{2}\right)^{-1 / 2}\right)$ and the thin plate spline $\left(\varphi(x)=x^{2} \log |x|\right)$. However, we concentrate on the Gaussian and the multiquadric because they exhibit most of the important features of our approach in a concrete setting. Similarly we only touch briefly on the $d$-dimensional analogue of (6.1.1), that is

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{n}^{(d)}=(\varphi(j-k))_{j, k \in[-n, n]^{d}} . \tag{6.1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

We shall still call $A_{n}^{(d)}$ a Toeplitz matrix. Moreover the matrix-vector multiplication

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{n}^{(d)} x=\left(\sum_{k \in[-n, n]^{d}} \varphi(\|j-k\|) x_{k}\right)_{j \in[-n, n]^{d}} \tag{6.1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\|\cdot\|$ is the Euclidean norm and $x=\left(x_{j}\right)_{j \in[-n, n]^{d}}$, can still be calculated in $\mathcal{O}(N \log N)$ operations, where $N=(2 n+1)^{d}$, whilst requiring $\mathcal{O}(N)$ real numbers to be stored. This trick is a simple extension of the Toeplitz matrix-vector multiplication method when $d=1$, but seems to be less familiar for $d$ greater than one. This will be dealt with in detail in Baxter (1992c).

### 6.2. The Gaussian

Our treatment of the preconditioned conjugate gradient (PCG) method follows Section 10.3 of Golub and Van Loan (1989), and we begin with a general description. We let $n$ be a positive integer and $A \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$ be a symmetric positive definite matrix. For any nonsingular symmetric matrix $P \in \mathcal{R}^{n \times n}$ and $b \in \mathcal{R}^{n}$ we can use the following iteration to solve the linear system $P A P x=P b$.

Algorithm 6.2.1. Choose any $x_{0}$ in $\mathcal{R}^{n}$. Set $r_{0}=P b-P A P x_{0}$ and $d_{0}=r_{0}$.
For $k=0,1,2, \ldots$ do begin

$$
\begin{gathered}
a_{k}=r_{k}^{T} r_{k} / d_{k}^{T} P A P d_{k} \\
x_{k+1}=x_{k}+a_{k} d_{k} \\
r_{k+1}=r_{k}-a_{k} P A P d_{k} \\
b_{k}=r_{k+1}^{T} r_{k+1} / r_{k}^{T} r_{k} \\
d_{k+1}=r_{k+1}+b_{k} d_{k}
\end{gathered}
$$

Stop if $\left\|r_{k+1}\right\|$ or $\left\|d_{k+1}\right\|$ is sufficiently small. end.

In order to simplify Algorithm 6.2.1 define

$$
\begin{equation*}
C=P^{2}, \quad \xi_{k}=P x_{k}, \quad r_{k}=P \rho_{k} \quad \text { and } \quad \delta_{k}=P d_{k} \tag{6.2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Substituting in Algorithm 6.2.1 we obtain the following method.

Algorithm 6.2.2. Choose any $\xi_{0}$ in $\mathcal{R}^{n}$. Set $\rho_{0}=b-A \xi_{0}, \delta_{0}=C \rho_{0}$.
For $k=0,1,2, \ldots$ do begin

$$
\begin{gathered}
a_{k}=\rho_{k}^{T} C \rho_{k} / \delta_{k}^{T} A \delta_{k} \\
\xi_{k+1}=\xi_{k}+a_{k} \delta_{k} \\
\rho_{k+1}=\rho_{k}-a_{k} A \delta_{k} \\
b_{k}=\rho_{k+1}^{T} C \rho_{k+1} / \rho_{k}^{T} C \rho_{k} \\
\delta_{k+1}=C \rho_{k+1}+b_{k} \delta_{k}
\end{gathered}
$$

Stop if $\left\|\rho_{k+1}\right\|$ or $\left\|\delta_{k+1}\right\|$ is sufficiently small.
end.
It is Algorithm 6.2.2 that we shall consider as our PCG method in this section, and we shall call $C$ the preconditioner. We see that the only restriction on $C$ is that it must be a symmetric positive definite matrix, but we observe that the spectrum of $C A$ should consist of a small number of clusters, preferably one cluster concentrated at one. At this point, we also mention that the condition number of $C A$ is not a reliable guide to the efficacy of our preconditioner. For example, consider the two cases when (i) $C A$ has only two different eigenvalues, say 1 and 100,000 , and (ii) when $C A$ has eigenvalues uniformly distributed in the interval $[1,100]$. The former has the larger condition number but, in exact arithmetic, the answer will be achieved in two steps, whereas the number of steps can be as high as $n$ in the latter case. Thus the term "preconditioner" is sometimes inappropriate, although its usage has become standard.

We can shed no light on the problem of constructing preconditioners for the general case.Accordingly, we let $A$ be the matrix $A_{n}$ of (6.1.1) and let $\varphi(x)=$ $\exp \left(-x^{2}\right)$. Thus $A_{n}$ is positive definite and can be embedded in the bi-infinite symmetric Toeplitz matrix

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{\infty}=(\varphi(j-k))_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}} . \tag{6.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

The classical theory of Toeplitz operators (see, for instance, Grenander and Szegő (1984)) and the work of Section 4 provide the relations

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Sp} A_{n} \subset \operatorname{Sp} A_{\infty}=[\sigma(\pi), \sigma(0)] \subset(0, \infty), \tag{6.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\sigma$ is the symbol function

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma(\xi)=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}} \hat{\varphi}(\xi+2 \pi k), \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R} \tag{6.2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Further, Theorem 9 of Buhmann and Micchelli (1991) allows us to conclude that, for any fixed integers $j$ and $k$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left(A_{n}^{-1}\right)_{j, k}=\left(A_{\infty}^{-1}\right)_{j, k} \tag{6.2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

It was equations (6.2.3) and (6.2.5) which led us to investigate the possibility of using some of the elements of $A_{n}^{-1}$ for a relatively small value of $n$ to construct preconditioners for $A_{N}$, where $N$ may be much larger than $n$. Specifically, let us choose integers $0<m \leq n$ and define the sequence

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{j}=\left(A_{n}^{-1}\right)_{j 0}, \quad j=-m, \ldots, m \tag{6.2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

We now let $C_{N}$ be the $(2 N+1) \times(2 N+1)$ banded symmetric Toeplitz matrix

$$
C_{N}=\left(\begin{array}{cccccc}
c_{0} & \ldots & c_{m} & & &  \tag{6.2.7}\\
\vdots & \ddots & & \ddots & & \\
c_{m} & & & & & \\
& \ddots & & & & c_{m} \\
& & & & & \vdots \\
& & & c_{m} & \ldots & c_{0}
\end{array}\right)
$$

We claim that, for sufficiently large $m$ and $n, C_{N}$ provides an excellent preconditioner when $A=A_{N}$ in Algorithm 6.2.2. Before discussing any theoretical motivation for this choice of preconditioner, we present an example. We let $n=64, m=9$ and $N=32,768$. Constructing $A_{n}$ and calculating the elements $\left\{\left(A_{n}^{-1}\right)_{j 0}: j=0,1, \ldots, m\right\}$ we find that

$$
\left(\begin{array}{c}
c_{0}  \tag{6.2.8}\\
c_{1} \\
\vdots \\
c_{9}
\end{array}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{r}
1.4301 \times 10^{0} \\
-5.9563 \times 10^{-1} \\
2.2265 \times 10^{-1} \\
-8.2083 \times 10^{-2} \\
3.0205 \times 10^{-2} \\
-1.1112 \times 10^{-2} \\
4.0880 \times 10^{-3} \\
-1.5039 \times 10^{-3} \\
5.5325 \times 10^{-4} \\
-2.0353 \times 10^{-4}
\end{array}\right) .
$$



FIGURE 6.1: The symbol function for $C_{\infty}$.
Now $C_{N}$ can be embedded in the bi-infinite Toeplitz matrix $C_{\infty}$ defined by

$$
\left(C_{\infty}\right)_{j k}= \begin{cases}c_{j-k}, & |j-k| \leq m  \tag{6.2.9}\\ 0, & |j-k|>m\end{cases}
$$

and the symbol for this operator is the trigonometric polynomial

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{C_{\infty}}(\xi)=\sum_{j=-m}^{m} c_{j} e^{i j \xi}, \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R} \tag{6.2.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

In Figure 6.1 we display a graph of $\sigma_{C_{\infty}}$ for $0 \leq \xi \leq 2 \pi$, and it is clearly a positive function. Thus the relations

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Sp} C_{N} \subset \operatorname{Sp} C_{\infty}=\left\{\sigma_{C_{\infty}}(\xi): \xi \in[0,2 \pi]\right\} \subset(0, \infty) \tag{6.2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

imply that $C_{N}$ is positive definite. Hence it is suitable to use $C_{N}$ as the preconditioner in Algorithm 6.2.2. Our aim in this example is to compare this choice of preconditioner with the use of the identity matrix as the preconditioner. To this end, we let the elements of the righthandside vector $b$ of Algorithm 6.2.2 be random real numbers uniformly distributed in the interval $[-1,1]$. Applying Algorithm 6.2.2 using the identity matrix as the preconditioner provides the results of Table 6.1. Table 6.2 contains the analogous results using (6.2.7) and (6.2.8). In both cases the iterations were stopped when the residual vector satisfied the bound $\left\|r_{k+1}\right\| /\|b\|<10^{-13}$. The behaviour shown in the tables is typical; we find that the number of steps required is independent of $N$ and $b$.

| Iteration | Error |
| :--- | :--- |
| 1 | $2.797904 \times 10^{1}$ |
| 10 | $1.214777 \times 10^{-2}$ |
| 20 | $1.886333 \times 10^{-6}$ |
| 30 | $2.945903 \times 10^{-10}$ |
| 33 | $2.144110 \times 10^{-11}$ |
| 34 | $8.935534 \times 10^{-12}$ |

Table 6.1: No preconditioning

| Iteration | Error |
| :--- | :--- |
| 1 | $2.315776 \times 10^{-1}$ |
| 2 | $1.915017 \times 10^{-3}$ |
| 3 | $1.514617 \times 10^{-7}$ |
| 4 | $1.365228 \times 10^{-11}$ |
| 5 | $1.716123 \times 10^{-15}$ |

Table 6.2: Using (6.2.7) and (6.2.8) as the preconditioner
Why should (6.2.7) and (6.2.8) provide a good preconditioner? Let us consider the bi-infinite Toeplitz matrix $C_{\infty} A_{\infty}$. The spectrum of this operator is given
by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Sp} C_{\infty} A_{\infty}=\left\{\sigma_{C_{\infty}}(\xi) \sigma(\xi): \xi \in[0,2 \pi]\right\} \tag{6.2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\sigma$ is given by (6.2.4) and $\sigma_{C_{\infty}}$ by (6.2.10). Therefore in order to concentrate $\operatorname{Sp} C_{\infty} A_{\infty}$ at unity we must have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{C_{\infty}}(\xi) \sigma(\xi) \approx 1, \quad \xi \in[0,2 \pi] \tag{6.2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

In other words, we want $\sigma_{C_{\infty}}$ to be a trigonometric polynomial approximating the continuous function $1 / \sigma$. Now if the Fourier series of $1 / \sigma$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma^{-1}(\xi)=\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}} \gamma_{j} e^{i j \xi}, \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R} \tag{6.2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

then its Fourier coefficients $\left(\gamma_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}}$ are the coefficients of the cardinal function $\chi$ for the integer grid, that is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\chi(x)=\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}} \gamma_{j} \varphi(x-j), \quad x \in \mathcal{R} \tag{6.2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\chi(k)=\delta_{0 k}, \quad k \in \mathcal{Z} \tag{6.2.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

(See, for instance, Buhmann (1990).) Recalling (6.2.5), we deduce that one way to calculate approximate values of the coefficients $\left(\gamma_{j}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}}$ is to solve the linear system

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{n} c^{(n)}=e^{0} \tag{6.2.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $e^{0}=\left(\delta_{j 0}\right)_{j=-n}^{n} \in \mathcal{R}^{2 n+1}$. This observation is not new; indeed Buhmann and Powell (1990) used precisely this idea to calculate approximate values of the cardinal function $\chi$. We now set

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{j}=c_{j}^{(n)}, \quad 0 \leq j \leq m, \tag{6.2.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

and we observe that the symbol function $\sigma$ for the Gaussian is a theta function (see Section 4.2). Thus $\sigma$ is a positive continuous function whose Fourier series is absolutely convergent. Hence $1 / \sigma$ is a positive continuous function and Wiener's
lemma (Rudin (1973)) implies the absolute convergence, and therefore the uniform convergence, of its Fourier series. We deduce that the symbol function $\sigma_{C_{\infty}}$ can be chosen to approximate $1 / \sigma$ to within any required accuracy. More formally we have the

Lemma 6.2.3. Given any $\epsilon>0$, there are positive integers $m$ and $n_{0}$ such that

$$
\left|\sigma(\xi) \sum_{j=-m}^{m} c_{j}^{(n)} e^{i j \xi}-1\right| \leq \epsilon, \quad \xi \in[0,2 \pi],
$$

for every $n \geq n_{0}$, where $c^{(n)}=\left(c_{j}^{(n)}\right)_{j=-n}^{n}$ is given by (6.2.17).
Proof. The uniform convergence of the Fourier series for $\sigma$ implies that we can choose $m$ such that

$$
\left|\sigma(\xi) \sum_{j=-m}^{m} \gamma_{j} e^{i j \xi}-1\right| \leq \epsilon, \quad \xi \in[0,2 \pi] .
$$

By (6.2.5), we can also choose $n_{0}$ such that $\left|\gamma_{j}-c_{j}^{(n)}\right| \leq \epsilon$ for $j=-m, \ldots, m$ and $n \geq n_{0}$. Then we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|\sigma(\xi) \sum_{j=-m}^{m} c_{j}^{(n)} e^{i j \xi}-1\right| & \leq\left|\sigma(\xi) \sum_{j=-m}^{m} \gamma_{j} e^{i j \xi}-1\right|+\sigma(\xi)\left|\sum_{j=-m}^{m}\left(\gamma_{j}-c_{j}^{(n)}\right) e^{i j \xi}\right| \\
& \leq \epsilon[1+(2 m+1) \sigma(0)]
\end{aligned}
$$

remembering from Chapter 4 that $0<\sigma(\pi) \leq \sigma(\xi) \leq \sigma(0)$. Since $\epsilon$ is arbitrary the lemma is true.

### 6.3. The Multiquadric

The multiquadric interpolation matrix

$$
A=\left(\varphi\left(\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\|\right)\right)_{j, k=1}^{n}
$$

where $\varphi(r)=\left(r^{2}+c^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}$ and $\left(x_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$ are points in $\mathcal{R}^{d}$, is not positive definite. We recall from Chapter 2 that it is almost negative definite, that is for any real numbers $\left(y_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$ satisfying $\sum y_{j}=0$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j, k=1}^{n} y_{j} y_{k} \varphi\left(\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\|\right) \leq 0 \tag{6.3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Furthermore, inequality (6.3.1) is strict whenever $n \geq 2$ and the points $\left(x_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n}$ are all different, and we shall assume this for the rest of the section. In other words, $A$ is negative definite on the subspace $\langle e\rangle^{\perp}$, where $e=[1,1, \ldots, 1]^{T} \in \mathcal{R}^{n}$.

Of course we cannot apply Algorithms 6.2.1 and 6.2.2 in this case. However we can use the almost negative definiteness of $A$ to solve a closely related linearly constrained quadratic programming problem:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\text { minimize } & \frac{1}{2} \xi^{T} A \xi-b^{T} \xi  \tag{6.3.2}\\
\text { subject to } & e^{T} \xi=0
\end{array}
$$

where $b$ can be any element of $\mathcal{R}^{n}$. It can be shown that the standard theory of Lagrange multipliers guarantees the existence of a unique pair of vectors $\xi^{*} \in \mathcal{R}^{n}$ and $\eta^{*} \in \mathcal{R}^{m}$ satisfying the equations

$$
\begin{align*}
A \xi^{*}+e \eta^{*} & =b \\
\text { and } e^{T} \xi^{*} & =0 \tag{6.3.3}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\eta^{*}$ is the Lagrange multiplier vector for the constrained optimization problem (6.3.2). We do not go into further detail on this point because the nonsingularity of the matrix

$$
\left(\begin{array}{ll}
A & e  \tag{6.3.4}\\
e^{T} & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

is well-known (see, for instance, Powell (1990)). Instead we observe that one way to solve (6.3.3) is to apply the following modification of Algorithm 6.2.1 to (6.3.2).

Algorithm 6.3.1. Let $P$ be any symmetric $n \times n$ matrix such that $\operatorname{ker} P=\langle e\rangle$.
Set $x_{0}=0, r_{0}=P b-P A P x_{0}, d_{0}=r_{0}$.
For $k=0,1,2, \ldots$ do begin

$$
\begin{gathered}
a_{k}=r_{k}^{T} r_{k} / d_{k}^{T} P A P d_{k} \\
x_{k+1}=x_{k}+a_{k} d_{k} \\
r_{k+1}=r_{k}-a_{k} P A P d_{k} \\
b_{k}=r_{k+1}^{T} r_{k+1} / r_{k}^{T} r_{k} \\
d_{k+1}=r_{k+1}+b_{k} d_{k}
\end{gathered}
$$

Stop if $\left\|r_{k+1}\right\|$ or $\left\|d_{k+1}\right\|$ is sufficiently small. end.

We observe that Algorithm 6.3.1 solves the linearly constrained optimization problem

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\operatorname{minimize} & \frac{1}{2} x^{T} P A P x-b^{T} P x  \tag{6.3.5}\\
\text { subject to } & e^{T} x=0
\end{array}
$$

Moreover, the following elementary lemma implies that the solutions $\xi^{*}$ of (6.3.3) and $x^{*}$ of (6.3.5) are related by the equations $\xi^{*}=P x^{*}$.

Lemma 6.3.2. Let $S$ be any symmetric $n \times n$ matrix and let $K=\operatorname{ker} S$. The $S: K^{\perp} \rightarrow K^{\perp}$ is a bijection. In other words, given any $b \in K^{\perp}$ there is precisely one $a \in K^{\perp}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
S a=b \tag{6.3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. For any $n \times n$ matrix $M$ we have the equation

$$
\mathcal{R}^{n}=\operatorname{ker} M \oplus \operatorname{Im} M^{T} .
$$

Consequently the symmetric matrix $S$ satisfies

$$
\mathcal{R}^{n}=\operatorname{ker} S \oplus \operatorname{Im} S,
$$

whence $\operatorname{Im} S=K^{\perp}$. Hence for every $b \in K^{\perp}$ there exists $\alpha \in \mathcal{R}^{n}$ such that $S \alpha=b$. Now we can write $\alpha=a+\beta$, where $a \in K^{\perp}$ and $\beta \in K$ are uniquely determined by $\alpha$. Thus $S a=S \alpha=b$, and (6.3.6) has a solution. If $a^{\prime} \in K^{\perp}$ also satifies (6.3.6), then their difference $a-a^{\prime}$ lies in the intersection $K \cap K^{\perp}=\{0\}$, which settles the uniqeuness of $a$.

Setting $P=S$ and $K=\langle e\rangle$ in Lemma 6.3.2 we deduce that there is exactly one $x^{*} \in\langle e\rangle^{\perp}$ such that

$$
P A P x^{*}=P b,
$$

and $P A P$ is negative definite when restricted to the subspace $\langle e\rangle^{\perp}$. Follwing the development of Section 6.2, we define

$$
\begin{equation*}
C=P^{2}, \quad \xi_{k}=P x_{k}, \quad \text { and } \quad \delta_{k}=P d_{k}, \tag{6.3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

as in equation (6.2.1). However we cannot define $\rho_{k}$ by (6.2.1) because $P$ is singular. One solution, advocated by Dyn, Levin and Rippa (1986), is to use the recurrence for $\left(\rho_{k}\right)$ embodied in Algorithm 6.2.1 without further ado.

Algorithm 6.3.3a. Choose any $\xi_{0}$ in $\langle e\rangle^{\perp}$. Set $\rho_{0}=b-A \xi_{0}$ and $\delta_{0}=C \rho_{0}$.
For $k=0,1,2, \ldots$ do begin

$$
\begin{gathered}
a_{k}=\rho_{k}^{T} C \rho_{k} / \delta_{k}^{T} A \delta_{k} \\
\xi_{k+1}=\xi_{k}+a_{k} \delta_{k} \\
\rho_{k+1}=\rho_{k}-a_{k} A \delta_{k} \\
b_{k}=\rho_{k+1}^{T} C \rho_{k+1} / \rho_{k}^{T} C \rho_{k} \\
\delta_{k+1}=C \rho_{k+1}+b_{k} \delta_{k}
\end{gathered}
$$

Stop if $\left\|\rho_{k+1}\right\|$ or $\left\|\delta_{k+1}\right\|$ is sufficiently small.
end.

However this algorithm is unstable in finite precision arithmetic, as we shall see in our main example below. One modification that sucessfully avoids instability is to force the condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho_{k} \in\langle e\rangle^{\perp}, \tag{6.3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

to hold for all $k$. Now Lemma 6.3.2 implies the existence of exactly one vector $\rho_{k} \in$ $\langle e\rangle^{\perp}$ for which $P \rho_{k}=r_{k}$. Therefore, defining $Q$ to be the orthogonal projection onto $\langle e\rangle^{\perp}$, that is $Q: x \mapsto x-e\left(e^{T} x\right) /\left(e^{T} e\right)$, we obtain

Algorithm 6.3.3b. Choose any $\xi_{0}$ in $\langle e\rangle^{\perp}$. Set $\rho_{0}=Q\left(b-A \xi_{0}\right), \delta_{0}=C \rho_{0}$.
For $k=0,1,2, \ldots$ do begin

$$
\begin{gathered}
a_{k}=\rho_{k}^{T} C \rho_{k} / \delta_{k}^{T} A \delta_{k} \\
\quad \xi_{k+1}=\xi_{k}+a_{k} \delta_{k} \\
\rho_{k+1}=Q\left(\rho_{k}-a_{k} A \delta_{k}\right) \\
b_{k}=\rho_{k+1}^{T} C \rho_{k+1} / \rho_{k}^{T} C \rho_{k} \\
\quad \delta_{k+1}=C \rho_{k+1}+b_{k} \delta_{k}
\end{gathered}
$$

Stop if $\left\|\rho_{k+1}\right\|$ or $\left\|\delta_{k+1}\right\|$ is sufficiently small.
end.

We see that the only restriction on $C$ is that it must be a non-negative definite symmetric matrix such that $\operatorname{ker} C=\langle e\rangle$. It is easy to construct such a
matrix given a positive definite symmetric matrix D by adding a rank one matrix:

$$
\begin{equation*}
C=D-\frac{(D e)(D e)^{T}}{e^{T} D e} \tag{6.3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

The Cauchy-Schwarz inequality implies that $x^{T} C x \geq 0$ with equality if and only if $x \in\langle e\rangle$. Of course we do not need to form $C$ explicitly, since $C: x \mapsto D x-$ ( $\left.e^{T} D x / e^{T} D e\right) D e$. Before constructing $D$ we consider the spectral properties of $A_{\infty}=(\varphi(j-k))_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}}$ in more detail.

A minor modification to Proposition 5.2.2 yields the following useful result. We recall the definition of a zero-summing sequence from Definition 4.3.1 and that of the symbol function from (5.2.7).

Proposition 6.3.4. For every $\eta \in(0,2 \pi)$ we can find a set $\left\{\left(y_{j}^{(n)}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}}: n=\right.$ $1,2, \ldots\}$ of zero-summing sequences such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}} y_{j}^{(n)} y_{k}^{(n)} \varphi(j-k) / \sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}}\left[y_{j}^{(n)}\right]^{2}=\sigma(\eta) \tag{6.3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. We adopt the proof technique of Proposition 5.2.2. For each positive integer $n$ we define the trigonometric polynomial

$$
L_{n}(\xi)=n^{-1 / 2} \sum_{k=0}^{n-1} e^{i k \xi}, \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}
$$

and we recall from Section 4.2 that

$$
\begin{equation*}
K_{n}(\xi)=\frac{\sin ^{2} n \xi / 2}{n \sin ^{2} \xi / 2}=\left|L_{n}(\xi)\right|^{2} \tag{6.3.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $K_{n}$ is the $n$th degree Fejér kernel. We now choose $\left(y_{j}^{(n)}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}}$ to be the Fourier coefficients of the trigonometric polynomial $\xi \mapsto L_{n}(\xi-\eta) \sin \xi / 2$, which implies the relation

$$
\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}} y_{j}^{(n)} e^{i j \xi}\right|^{2}=\sin ^{2} \xi / 2 K_{n}(\xi-\eta)
$$

and we see that $\left(y_{j}^{(n)}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}}$ is a zero-summing sequence. By the Parseval relation we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}}\left[y_{j}^{(n)}\right]^{2}=(2 \pi)^{-1} \int_{0}^{2 \pi} \sin ^{2} \xi / 2 K_{n}(\xi-\eta) d \xi \tag{6.3.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the approximate identity property of the Fejér kernel (Zygmund (1988), p. 86) implies that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sin ^{2} \eta / 2 & =\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}(2 \pi)^{-1} \int_{0}^{2 \pi} \sin ^{2} \xi / 2 K_{n}(\xi-\eta) d \xi \\
& =\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}}\left[y_{j}^{(n)}\right]^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

Further, because $\sigma$ is continuous on $(0,2 \pi)$ (see Section 4.4), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sin ^{2} \eta / 2 \sigma(\eta) & =\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}(2 \pi)^{-1} \int_{0}^{2 \pi} \sin ^{2} \xi / 2 K_{n}(\xi-\eta) \sigma(\xi) d \xi \\
& =\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}} y_{j}^{(n)} y_{k}^{(n)} \varphi(j-k),
\end{aligned}
$$

the last line being a consequence of (4.3.6).

Thus we have shown that, just as in the classical theory of Toeplitz operators (Grenander and Szegő (1984)), everything depends on the range of values of the symbol function $\sigma$. Because $\sigma$ inherits the double pole that $\hat{\varphi}$ enjoys at zero, we have $\sigma:(0,2 \pi) \mapsto(\sigma(\pi), \infty)$. In Figure 6.2 we display the function $[0,2 \pi] \ni \xi \mapsto 1 / \sigma(\xi)$.

Now let $m$ be a positive integer and let $\left(d_{j}\right)_{j=-m}^{m}$ be an even sequence of real numbers. We define a bi-infinite banded symmetric Toeplitz matrix $D_{\infty}$ by the equations

$$
\left(D_{\infty}\right)_{j k}=\left\{\begin{array}{lr}
d_{j-k}, & |j-k| \leq m  \tag{6.3.13}\\
0, & \text { otherwise }
\end{array}\right.
$$

Thus $\left(D_{\infty} A_{\infty}\right)_{j k}=\psi(j-k)$ where $\psi(x)=\sum_{l=-m}^{m} d_{l} \varphi(x-l)$. Further

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}} y_{j} y_{k} \psi(j-k)=(2 \pi)^{-1} \int_{0}^{2 \pi}\left|\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}} y_{j} e^{i j \xi}\right|^{2} \sigma_{D_{\infty}}(\xi) \sigma(\xi) d \xi \tag{6.3.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now the function $\xi \mapsto \sigma_{D_{\infty}}(\xi) \sigma(\xi)$ is continuous for $\xi \in(0,2 \pi)$, so the argument of Proposition 6.3.4 also shows that, for every $\eta \in(0,2 \pi)$, we can find a set $\left\{\left(y_{j}^{(n)}\right)_{j \in \mathcal{Z}}: n=1,2, \ldots\right\}$ of zero-summing sequences such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{j, k \in \mathcal{Z}} y_{j}^{(n)} y_{k}^{(n)} \psi(j-k) / \sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}}\left[y_{j}^{(n)}\right]^{2}=\sigma_{D_{\infty}}(\eta) \sigma(\eta) \tag{6.3.15}
\end{equation*}
$$



Figure 6.2: The reciprocal symbol function $1 / \sigma$ for the multiquadric.
A good preconditioner must ensure that $\left\{\sigma_{D_{\infty}}(\xi) \sigma(\xi): \xi \in(0,2 \pi)\right\}$ is a bounded set. Because of the form of $\sigma_{D_{\infty}}$ we have the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j=-m}^{m} d_{j}=0 \tag{6.3.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, as in Section 6.2, we want the approximation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{D_{\infty}}(\xi) \sigma(\xi) \approx 1, \quad \xi \in(0,2 \pi) \tag{6.3.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

and we need $\sigma_{D_{\infty}}$ to be a non-negative trigonometric polynomial which is positive almost everywhere, which ensures that every one of its principal minors is positive definite.

Recalling Theorem 9 of Buhmann and Micchelli (1991), we let

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{j}^{(n)}=-\left(A_{n}^{-1}\right)_{j 0}, \quad j=-m, \ldots, m \tag{6.3.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

and to subtract a multiple of the vector $[1, \ldots, 1]^{T} \in \mathcal{R}^{2 m+1}$ from $\left(c_{j}^{(n)}\right)_{j=-m}^{m}$ to form a new vector $\left(d_{j}\right)_{j=-m}^{m}$ satisfying $\sum_{j=-m}^{m} d_{j}=0$. Recalling that $c_{j}^{(n)} \approx \gamma_{j}$ for suitable $m$ and $n$, where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma^{-1}(\xi)=\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}} \gamma_{j} e^{i j \xi}, \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R} \tag{6.3.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}} \gamma_{j}=0$ (since $\sigma$ inherits the double pole of $\hat{\varphi}$ at zero), we hope to achieve (6.3.17). Fortunately, in several cases, we find that $\sigma_{D_{\infty}}$ is negative on $(0,2 \pi)$, so that $\sigma_{D_{\infty}}$ needs no further modifications. Unfortunately we cannot explain this lucky fact at present, but perhaps one should not always look a mathematical gift horse in the mouth. Therefore let $n=64$ and $m=9$. Direct calculation yields

$$
\left(\begin{array}{c}
c_{0}  \tag{6.3.20}\\
c_{1} \\
\vdots \\
c_{9}
\end{array}\right)=-\left(\begin{array}{r}
-6.8219 \times 10^{0} \\
4.9588 \times 10^{0} \\
-2.0852 \times 10^{0} \\
7.2868 \times 10^{-1} \\
-2.5622 \times 10^{-1} \\
8.8267 \times 10^{-1} \\
-3.1071 \times 10^{-2} \\
1.0626 \times 10^{-2} \\
-3.7923 \times 10^{-3} \\
1.2636 \times 10^{-3}
\end{array}\right),
$$

and we then obtain

$$
-\left(\begin{array}{c}
c_{0}  \tag{6.3.21}\\
c_{1} \\
\vdots \\
c_{9}
\end{array}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{r}
-6.8220 \times 10^{0} \\
4.9587 \times 10^{0} \\
-2.0852 \times 10^{0} \\
7.2863 \times 10^{-1} \\
-2.5626 \times 10^{-1} \\
8.8224 \times 10^{-1} \\
-3.1113 \times 10^{-2} \\
1.0583 \times 10^{-2} \\
-3.8350 \times 10^{-3} \\
1.2210 \times 10^{-3}
\end{array}\right) .
$$

Figures 6.3 and 6.4 display the functions $\sigma_{D_{\infty}}$ and $\xi \mapsto \sigma_{D_{\infty}}(\xi) / \sin ^{2}(\xi / 2)$ on the domain $[0,2 \pi]$ respectively. The latter is clearly a positive function, which implies that the former is positive on the open interval $(0,2 \pi)$.

Thus, given

$$
A_{N}=(\varphi(j-k))_{j, k=-N}^{N}
$$

for any $N \geq n$, we let $D_{N}$ be any $(2 N+1) \times(2 N+1)$ principal minor of $D_{\infty}$ and define the preconditioner $C_{N}$ by the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{N}=D_{N}-\frac{\left(D_{N} e\right)\left(D_{N} e\right)^{T}}{e^{T} D_{N} e} \tag{6.3.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $e=[1, \ldots, 1]^{T} \in \mathcal{R}^{2 N+1}$. We reiterate that we actually compute the matrixvector product $C_{N} x$ by the operations $x \mapsto D_{N} x-\left(e^{T} D_{N} x / e^{T} D_{N} e\right) e$ rather than by storing the elements of $C_{N}$ in memory.
$C_{N}$ provides an excellent preconditioner. Tables 6.3 and 6.4 illustrate its use when Algorithm 6.3.3b is applied to the linear system

$$
\begin{array}{r}
A_{N} x+e y=b, \\
e^{T} x=0 \tag{6.3.23}
\end{array}
$$

when $N=2,048$ and $N=32,768$ respectively. Here $y \in \mathcal{R}, e=[1, \ldots, 1]^{T} \in$ $\mathcal{R}^{2 N+1}$ and $b \in \mathcal{R}^{2 N+1}$ consists of pseudo-random real numbers uniformly distributed in the interval $[-1,1]$. Again, this behaviour is typical and all our numerical experiments indicate that the number of steps is independent of $N$. We remind the reader that the error shown is $\left\|\rho_{k+1}\right\|$, but that the iterations are stopped when either $\left\|\rho_{k+1}\right\|$ or $\left\|\delta_{k+1}\right\|$ is less than $10^{-13}\|b\|$, where we are using the notation of Algorithm 6.3.3b.

It is interesting to compare Table 6.3 with Table 6.5. Here we have chosen $m=1$, and the preconditioner is essentially a multiple of the second divided difference preconditioner advocated by Dyn, Levin and Rippa (1986). Indeed, we find that $d_{0}=7.8538$ and $d_{1}=d_{-1}=-3.9269$. We see that its behaviour is clearly inferior to the preconditioner generated by choosing $m=9$. Furthermore, this is to be expected, because we are choosing a smaller finite section to approximate
the reciprocal of the symbol function. However, because $\sigma_{D_{\infty}}(\xi)$ is a multiple of $\sin ^{2} \xi / 2$, this preconditioner still possesses the property that $\left\{\sigma_{D_{\infty}}(\xi) \sigma(\xi): \xi \in\right.$ $(0,2 \pi)\}$ is a bounded set of real numbers.

| Iteration | Error |
| :--- | :--- |
| 1 | $3.975553 \times 10^{4}$ |
| 2 | $8.703344 \times 10^{-1}$ |
| 3 | $2.463390 \times 10^{-2}$ |
| 4 | $8.741920 \times 10^{-3}$ |
| 5 | $3.650521 \times 10^{-4}$ |
| 6 | $5.029770 \times 10^{-6}$ |
| 7 | $1.204610 \times 10^{-5}$ |
| 8 | $1.141872 \times 10^{-7}$ |
| 9 | $1.872273 \times 10^{-9}$ |
| 10 | $1.197310 \times 10^{-9}$ |
| 11 | $3.103685 \times 10^{-11}$ |

Table 6.3: Preconditioned CG $-m=9, n=64, N=2,048$

Iteration Error
$1 \quad 2.103778 \times 10^{5}$
$2 \quad 4.287497 \times 10^{0}$
3
$5.163441 \times 10^{-1}$
$4 \quad 1.010665 \times 10^{-1}$
$5 \quad 1.845113 \times 10^{-3}$
$6 \quad 3.404016 \times 10^{-3}$
$7 \quad 3.341912 \times 10^{-5}$
$8 \quad 6.523212 \times 10^{-7}$
$9 \quad 1.677274 \times 10^{-5}$
$10 \quad 1.035225 \times 10^{-8}$
11
$1.900395 \times 10^{-10}$
Table 6.4: Preconditioned CG $-m=9, n=64, N=32,768$

It is also interesting to compare the spectra of $C_{n} A_{n}$ for $n=64$ and $m=1$ and $m=9$. Accordingly, Figures 6.5 and 6.6 display all but the largest nonzero eigenvalues of $C_{n} A_{n}$ for $m=1$ and $m=6$ respectively. The largest eigenvalues are 502.6097. and 288.1872, respectively, and these were omitted from the plots in order to reveal detail at smaller scales. We see that the clustering of the spectrum when $m=9$ is excellent.

| Iteration | Error |
| :--- | :--- |
| 1 | $2.645008 \times 10^{4}$ |
| 10 | $8.632419 \times 10^{0}$ |
| 20 | $9.210298 \times 10^{-1}$ |
| 30 | $7.695337 \times 10^{-1}$ |
| 40 | $3.187051 \times 10^{-5}$ |
| 50 | $5.061053 \times 10^{-7}$ |
| 60 | $7.596739 \times 10^{-9}$ |
| 70 | $1.200700 \times 10^{-10}$ |
| 73 | $3.539988 \times 10^{-11}$ |
| 74 | $1.992376 \times 10^{-11}$ |

Table 6.5: Preconditioned CG $-m=1, n=64, N=8,192$
The final topic in this section demonstrates the instability of Algorithm 6.3.3a when compared with Algorithm 6.3.3b. We refer the reader to Table 6.6, where we have chosen $m=9, n=N=64$, and setting $b=\left[1,4,9, \ldots, N^{2}\right]^{T}$. The iterations for Algorithm 6.3.3b, displayed in Table 6.7, were stopped at iteration 108. For Algorithm 6.3.3a, iterations were stopped when either $\left\|\rho_{k+1}\right\|$ or $\left\|\delta_{k+1}\right\|$ became smaller than $10^{-13}\|b\|$. It is useful to display the norm of $\left\|\delta_{k}\right\|$ rather than $\left\|\rho_{k}\right\|$ in this case. We see that the two algorithms almost agree on the early interations, but that Algorithm 6.3.3a soon begins cycling, and no convergence seems to occur. Thus when $\rho_{k}$ can leave the required subspace due to finite precision arithmetic, it is possible to attain non-descent directions.

| Iteration | $\left\\|\delta_{k}\right\\|-6.3 .3 \mathrm{a}$ | $\left\\|\delta_{k}\right\\|-6.3 .3 \mathrm{~b}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 1 | $4.436896 \times 10^{4}$ | $4.436896 \times 10^{4}$ |
| 2 | $2.083079 \times 10^{2}$ | $2.083079 \times 10^{2}$ |
| 3 | $2.339595 \times 10^{0}$ | $2.339595 \times 10^{0}$ |
| 4 | $1.206045 \times 10^{-1}$ | $1.206041 \times 10^{-1}$ |
| 5 | $1.698965 \times 10^{-3}$ | $1.597317 \times 10^{-3}$ |
| 6 | $6.537466 \times 10^{-2}$ | $6.512586 \times 10^{-2}$ |
| 7 | $1.879294 \times 10^{-4}$ | $9.254943 \times 10^{-6}$ |
| 8 | $2.767714 \times 10^{-2}$ | $1.984033 \times 10^{-7}$ |
| 9 | $3.453789 \times 10^{-4}$ |  |
| 10 | $1.914126 \times 10^{-3}$ |  |
| 20 | $4.628447 \times 10^{-1}$ |  |
| 30 | $3.696474 \times 10^{-0}$ |  |
| 40 | $8.061922 \times 10^{+3}$ |  |
| 50 | $2.155310 \times 10^{0}$ |  |
| 100 | $3.374467 \times 10^{-1}$ |  |
| 101 | $1.121903 \times 10^{0}$ |  |
| 102 | $1.920517 \times 10^{-1}$ |  |
| 103 | $3.772007 \times 10^{-2}$ |  |
| 104 | $3.170231 \times 10^{-2}$ |  |
| 105 | $2.612073 \times 10^{-1}$ |  |
| 106 | $2.236274 \times 10^{0}$ |  |
| 107 | $8.875137 \times 10^{-1}$ |  |
| 108 | $1.823607 \times 10^{-1}$ |  |

Table 6.5: Algorithms 6.3.3a \& b-m=1, $n=64, N=64, b=\left[1,4, \ldots, N^{2}\right]^{T}$.


Figure 6.3: The function $\sigma_{D_{\infty}}$.


Figure 6.4: The function $\xi \mapsto \sigma_{D_{\infty}}(\xi) / \sin ^{2}(\xi / 2)$.


Figure 6.5: The spectrum of $C_{n} A_{n}$ for $m=1$ and $n=64$.


Figure 6.6: The spectrum of $C_{n} A_{n}$ for $m=9$ and $n=64$.

## 7 : On the asymptotic cardinal function for the multiquadric

### 7.1. Introduction

The radial basis function approach to interpolating a function $f: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ on the integer lattice $\mathcal{Z}^{d}$ is as follows. Given a continuous univariate function $\varphi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow$ $\mathcal{R}$, we seek a cardinal function

$$
\begin{equation*}
\chi(x)=\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} a_{j} \varphi(\|x-j\|), \quad x \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{7.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

that satisfies

$$
\chi(k)=\delta_{0, k}, \quad k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d} .
$$

Therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
I f(x)=\sum_{j \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} f(j) \chi(x-j), \quad x \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{7.1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

is an interpolant to $f$ on the integer lattice whenever (7.1.2) is well defined. Here $\|\cdot\|$ is the Euclidean norm on $\mathcal{R}^{d}$. This approach provides a useful and flexible family of approximants for many choices of $\varphi$, but here we concentrate on the Hardy multiquadric $\varphi_{c}(r)=\left(r^{2}+c^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}$. For this function, Buhmann (1990) has shown that a cardinal function $\chi_{c}$ exists and its Fourier tranform is given by the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\chi}_{c}(\xi)=\frac{\hat{\varphi}_{c}(\|\xi\|)}{\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \hat{\varphi}_{c}(\|\xi+2 \pi k\|)}, \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{7.1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left\{\hat{\varphi}_{c}(\|\xi\|): \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d}\right\}$ is the generalized Fourier transform of $\left\{\varphi_{c}(\|x\|)\right.$ : $\left.x \in \mathcal{R}^{d}\right\}$. Further, $\chi_{c}$ possesses a classical Fourier transform (see Jones (1982) or Schwartz (1966)). In this chapter, we prove that $\hat{\chi}_{c}$ enjoys the following property:

$$
\lim _{c \rightarrow \infty} \hat{\chi}_{c}(\xi)= \begin{cases}1, & \xi \in(-\pi, \pi)^{d}  \tag{7.1.4}\\ 0, & \xi \notin[-\pi, \pi]^{d}\end{cases}
$$

which sheds new light on the approximation properties of the multiquadric as $c \rightarrow$ $\infty$. For example, in the case $d=1,(7.1 .4)$ implies that $\lim _{c \rightarrow \infty} \chi_{c}(x)=\operatorname{sinc}(x)$, providing a perhaps unexpected link with sampling theory and the classical theory of the Whittaker cardinal spline. Further, our work has links with the error analysis
of Buhmann and Dyn (1991) and illuminates the explicit calculation of Section 4 of Powell (1991). It may also be compared with the results of Madych and Nelson (1990) and Madych (1990), because these papers present analogous results for polyharmonic cardinal splines.

### 7.2. Some properties of the multiquadric

The generalized Fourier transform of $\varphi_{c}$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\varphi}_{c}(\|\xi\|)=-\pi^{-1}(2 \pi c /\|\xi\|)^{(d+1) / 2} K_{(d+1) / 2}(c\|\xi\|) \tag{7.2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

for nonzero $\xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$ (see Jones (1982)). Here $\left\{K_{\nu}(r): r>0\right\}$ are the modified Bessel functions, which are positive and smooth in $\mathcal{R}^{+}$, have a pole at the origin, and decay exponentially (see Abramowitz and Stegun (1970)). There is an integral representation for these modified Bessel functions (Abramowitz and Stegun (1970), equation 9.6.23) which transforms (7.2.1) into a highly useful formula for $\hat{\varphi}_{c}$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\varphi}_{c}(\|\xi\|)=-\lambda_{d} c^{d+1} \int_{1}^{\infty} \exp (-c x\|\xi\|)\left(x^{2}-1\right)^{d / 2} d x \tag{7.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\lambda_{d}=\pi^{d / 2} / \Gamma(1+d / 2)$. A simple consequence of (7.2.2) is the following lemma, which bounds the exponential decay of $\hat{\varphi}_{c}$.

Lemma 7.2.1. If $\|\xi\|>\|\eta\|>0$, then

$$
\left|\hat{\varphi}_{c}(\|\xi\|)\right| \leq \exp [-c(\|\xi\|-\|\eta\|)]\left|\hat{\varphi}_{c}(\|\eta\|)\right| .
$$

Proof. Applying (7.2.2), we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|\hat{\varphi}_{c}(\|\xi\|)\right| & =\lambda_{d} c^{d+1} \int_{1}^{\infty} \exp [-c x(\|\xi\|-\|\eta\|)] \exp (-c x\|\eta\|)\left(x^{2}-1\right)^{d / 2} d x \\
& \leq \exp (-c(\|\xi\|-\|\eta\|))\left|\hat{\varphi}_{c}(\|\eta\|)\right|,
\end{aligned}
$$

providing the desired bound.

We now prove our main result. We let $I: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be the characteristic function of the cube $[-\pi, \pi]^{d}$, that is

$$
I(\xi)= \begin{cases}1, & \xi \in[-\pi, \pi]^{d} \\ 0, & \xi \notin[-\pi, \pi]^{d}\end{cases}
$$

Proposition 7.2.2. Let $\xi$ be any fixed point of $\mathcal{R}^{d}$. We have

$$
\lim _{c \rightarrow \infty} \hat{\chi}_{c}(\xi)=I(\xi)
$$

if $\|\xi\|_{\infty} \neq \pi$, that is $\xi$ does not lie in the boundary of $[-\pi, \pi]^{d}$.
Proof. First, suppose that $\xi \notin[-\pi, \pi]^{d}$. Then there exists a nonzero integer $k_{0}$ such that $\left\|\xi+2 \pi k_{0}\right\|<\|\xi\|$, and Lemma 7.2 .1 provides the bounds

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|\hat{\varphi}_{c}(\|\xi\|)\right| & \leq \exp \left[-c\left(\|\xi\|-\left\|\xi+2 \pi k_{0}\right\|\right)\right]\left|\hat{\varphi}_{c}\left(\left\|\xi+2 \pi k_{0}\right\|\right)\right| \\
& \leq \exp \left[-c\left(\|\xi\|-\left\|\xi+2 \pi k_{0}\right\|\right)\right] \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}\left|\hat{\varphi}_{c}(\|\xi+2 \pi k\|)\right| .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus, applying (7.1.3) and remembering that $\hat{\varphi}_{c}$ does not change sign, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
0 \leq \hat{\chi}_{c}(\xi) \leq \exp \left[-c\left(\|\xi\|-\left\|\xi+2 \pi k_{0}\right\|\right)\right], \quad \xi \notin[-\pi, \pi]^{d} \tag{7.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

The upper bound of (7.2.3) converges to zero as $c \rightarrow \infty$, which completes the proof for this range of $\xi$.

Suppose now that $\xi \in(-\pi, \pi)^{d}$. Further, we shall assume that $\xi$ is nonzero, because we know that $\hat{\chi}_{c}(0)=1$ for all values of $c$. Then $\|\xi+2 \pi k\|>\|\xi\|$, for every nonzero integer $k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}$. Now (7.1.3) provides the expression

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\chi}_{c}(\xi)=\left(1+\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d} \backslash\{0\}}\left|\frac{\hat{\varphi}_{c}(\|\xi+2 \pi k\|)}{\hat{\varphi}_{c}(\|\xi\|)}\right|\right)^{-1} \tag{7.2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

We shall show that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{c \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d} \backslash\{0\}}\left|\frac{\hat{\varphi}_{c}(\|\xi+2 \pi k\|)}{\hat{\varphi}_{c}(\|\xi\|)}\right|=0, \quad \xi \in(-\pi, \pi)^{d} \tag{7.2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

which, together with (7.2.4), implies that $\lim _{c \rightarrow \infty} \hat{\chi}_{c}(\xi)=1$.
Now Lemma 7.2.1 implies that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d} \backslash\{0\}}\left|\frac{\hat{\varphi}_{c}(\|\xi+2 \pi k\|)}{\hat{\varphi}_{c}(\|\xi\|)}\right| \leq \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d} \backslash\{0\}} \exp [-c(\|\xi+2 \pi k\|-\|\xi\|)], \tag{7.2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

and each term of the series on the right converges to zero as $c \rightarrow \infty$, since $\| \xi+$ $2 \pi k\|>\| \xi \|$ for every nonzero integer $k$. Therefore we need only deal with the tail of the series. Specifically, we derive the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{c \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{\|k\| \geq 2\|e\|} \exp [-c(\|\xi+2 \pi k\|-\|\xi\|)]=0 \tag{7.2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $e=[1,1, \ldots, 1]^{T}$. Now, if $\|k\| \geq 2\|e\|$, then

$$
\|\xi+2 \pi k\|-\|\xi\| \geq 2 \pi(\|k\|-\|e\|) \geq \pi\|k\|,
$$

remembering that we have $\|\xi\| \leq \pi\|e\|$. Hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{\|k\| \geq 2\|e\|} \exp [-c(\|\xi+2 \pi k\|-\|\xi\|)] \leq \sum_{\|k\| \geq 2\|e\|} \exp (-\pi c\|k\|) . \tag{7.2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

It is a simple exercise to prove that the series $\sum_{\|k\| \geq 2\|e\|} \exp (-\pi\|k\|)$ is convergent. Therefore, given any $\epsilon>0$, there exists a positive number $R \geq 1$ such that

$$
\sum_{\|k\| \geq 2 R\|e\|} \exp (-\pi\|k\|) \leq \epsilon .
$$

Consequently, when $c \geq\lceil R\rceil$ we have the inequality

$$
\sum_{\|k\| \geq 2\|e\|} \exp (-\pi c\|k\|) \leq \sum_{\|k\| \geq 2 R\|e\|} \exp (-\pi\|k\|) \leq \epsilon,
$$

which establishes (7.2.5). The proof is complete.

### 7.3. Multiquadrics and entire functions of exponential type $\pi$

Definition 7.3.1 Let $f \in L^{2}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right)$. We shall say that $f$ is a function of exponential type $A$ if its Fourier transform $\hat{f}$ is supported by the cube $[-A, A]^{d}$. We shall denote the set of all functions of exponential type $A$ by $E_{A}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right)$.

We remark that the Paley-Wiener theorem implies that $f$ may be extended to an entire function on $\mathcal{C}^{d}$ satisfying a certain growth condition at infinity (see Stein and Weiss (1971), pages 108ff), although we do not need this result.

Lemma 7.3.2. Let $f \in E_{\pi}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right) \cap L^{2}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right)$ be a continuous function. Then we have the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \hat{f}(\xi+2 \pi k)=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} f(k) \exp (-i k \xi), \tag{7.3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

the second series being convergent in $L^{2}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right)$.
Proof. Let

$$
g(\xi)=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \hat{f}(\xi+2 \pi k), \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d}
$$

At any point $\xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d}$, this series contains at most one nonzero term, because of the condition on the support of $\hat{f}$. Hence $g$ is well defined. Further, we have the relations

$$
\int_{[-\pi, \pi]^{d}}|g(\xi)|^{2} d \xi=\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}|\hat{f}(\xi)|^{2} d \xi<\infty
$$

since the Parseval theorem implies that $\hat{f}$ is an element of $L^{2}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right)$. Thus $g \in$ $L^{2}\left([-\pi, \pi]^{d}\right)$ and its Fourier series

$$
g(\xi)=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} g_{k} \exp (i k \xi),
$$

is convergent in $L^{2}\left([-\pi, \pi]^{d}\right)$. The Fourier coefficients are given by the expressions

$$
g_{k}=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[-\pi, \pi]^{d}} \hat{f}(\xi) \exp (-i k \xi) d \xi=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}} \hat{f}(\xi) \exp (-i k \xi) d \xi=f(-k)
$$

where the final equation uses the Fourier inversion theorem for $L^{2}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right)$. The proof is complete.

We observe that an immediate consequence of the lemma is the convergence of the series $\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}[f(k)]^{2}$, by the Parseval theorem.

For the following results, we shall need the fact that $\chi_{c} \in L^{2}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right)$, which is a consequence of the analysis of Buhmann (1990).

Lemma 7.3.3. Let $f \in E_{\pi}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right) \cap L^{2}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right)$ be a continuous function. For each positive integer $n$, we define the function

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{S_{c}^{n} f}(\xi)=\left(\sum_{\|k\|_{1} \leq n} f(k) \exp (-i k \xi)\right) \hat{\chi}_{c}(\xi), \quad \xi \in \mathcal{R}^{d} \tag{7.3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $\left\{S_{c}^{n} f: n=1,2, \ldots\right\}$ forms a Cauchy sequence in $L^{2}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right)$.

Proof. Let $Q_{n}: \mathcal{R}^{d} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be the trigonometric polynomial

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q_{n}(\xi)=\sum_{\|k\|_{1} \leq n} f(k) \exp (-i k \xi) \tag{7.3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that $\widehat{S_{c}^{n} f}(\xi)=Q_{n}(\xi) \hat{\chi}_{c}(\xi)$. It is a consequence of Lemma 7.3.2 that this sequence of functions forms a Cauchy sequence in $L^{2}\left([-\pi, \pi]^{d}\right)$. Indeed, we shall prove that for $m \geq n$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\widehat{S_{c}^{m} f}-\widehat{S_{c}^{n} f}\right\|_{L^{2}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right)} \leq\left\|Q_{m}-Q_{n}\right\|_{L^{2}\left([-\pi, \pi]^{d}\right)} \tag{7.3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that the sequence of functions $\left\{\widehat{S_{c}^{n} f}: n=1,2, \ldots\right\}$ is a Cauchy sequence in $L^{2}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right)$.

Now Fubini's theorem provides the relation

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|\widehat{S_{c}^{m}} f-\widehat{S_{c}^{n} f}\right\|_{L^{2}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right)}^{2} & =\int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}}\left|Q_{m}(\xi)-Q_{n}(\xi)\right|^{2} \hat{\chi}_{c}^{2}(\xi) d \xi \\
& =\int_{[-\pi, \pi]^{d}}\left|Q_{m}(\xi)-Q_{n}(\xi)\right|^{2}\left(\sum_{l \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \hat{\chi}_{c}^{2}(\xi+2 \pi l)\right) d \xi \tag{7.3.5}
\end{align*}
$$

However, (7.1.3) gives the bound

$$
\begin{align*}
\sum_{l \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \hat{\chi}_{c}^{2}(\xi+2 \pi l) & =\sum_{l \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \hat{\varphi}_{c}^{2}(\|\xi+2 \pi l\|) /\left(\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \hat{\varphi}_{c}(\|\xi+2 \pi k\|)\right)^{2}  \tag{7.3.6}\\
& \leq 1
\end{align*}
$$

which, together with (7.3.5), yields inequality (7.3.4).
Thus we may define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{S_{c} f}(\xi)=\hat{\chi}_{c}(\xi) \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} f(k) \exp (-i k \xi) \tag{7.3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the series is convergent in $L^{2}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right)$. Applying the inverse Fourier transform term by term, we obtain the useful equation

$$
S_{c} f(x)=\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} f(k) \chi_{c}(x-k), \quad x \in \mathcal{R}^{d}
$$

Theorem 7.3.4. Let $f \in E_{\pi}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right) \cap L^{2}\left(\mathcal{R}^{d}\right)$ be a continuous function. We have

$$
\lim _{c \rightarrow \infty} S_{c} f(x)=f(x)
$$

and the convergence is uniform on $\mathcal{R}^{d}$.

Proof. We have the equation

$$
S_{c} f(x)-f(x)=(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{\mathcal{R}^{d}} \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}} \hat{f}(\xi+2 \pi k)\left(\hat{\chi}_{c}(\xi)-I(\xi)\right) \exp (i x \xi) d \xi
$$

Thus we deduce the bound

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left|S_{c} f(x)-f(x)\right| \\
\leq & (2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[-\pi, \pi]^{d}}|\hat{f}(\xi)| \sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d}}\left|\hat{\chi}_{c}(\xi+2 \pi k)-I(\xi+2 \pi k)\right| d \xi \\
= & (2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[-\pi, \pi]^{d}}|\hat{f}(\xi)|\left(1-\hat{\chi}_{c}(\xi)+\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d} \backslash\{0\}} \hat{\chi}_{c}(\xi+2 \pi k)\right) d \xi, \tag{7.3.8}
\end{align*}
$$

using the fact that $\hat{\chi}_{c}$ is non-negative, and we observe that this upper bound is independent of $x$. Therefore we prove that the upper bound converges to zero as $c \rightarrow \infty$.

Applying (7.1.3), we obtain the relation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{k \in \mathcal{Z}^{d} \backslash\{0\}} \hat{\chi}_{c}(\xi+2 \pi k)=1-\hat{\chi}_{c}(\xi), \tag{7.3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

whence

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|S_{c} f(x)-f(x)\right| \leq 2(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[-\pi, \pi]^{d}}|\hat{f}(\xi)|\left(1-\hat{\chi}_{c}(\xi)\right) d \xi \tag{7.3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now $\hat{f} \in L^{2}\left([-\pi, \pi]^{d}\right)$ implies $\hat{f} \in L^{1}\left([-\pi, \pi]^{d}\right)$, by the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality. Further, Proposition 7.2 .2 gives the limit $\lim _{c \rightarrow \infty} \hat{\chi}_{c}(\xi)=1$, for $\xi \in(-\pi, \pi)^{d}$, and we have $0 \leq 1-\hat{\chi}_{c}(\xi) \leq 1$, by (7.1.3). Therefore the dominated convergence theorem implies that

$$
\lim _{c \rightarrow \infty}(2 \pi)^{-d} \int_{[-\pi, \pi]^{d}}|\hat{f}(\xi)|\left(1-\hat{\chi}_{c}(\xi)\right) d \xi=0
$$

The proof is complete.

### 7.4. Discussion

Section 4 of Powell (1991) provides an explicit calculation that is analogous to the proof of Theorem 7.3.4 when $f(x)=x^{2}$. Of course, this function does not satisfy the conditions of Theorem 7.3.4. Therefore extensions of this result are necessary, but the final form of the theorem is not clear at present.

Theorem 7.3.4 encourages the use of large $c$ for certain functions. Indeed, it suggests that large $c$ will provide high accuracy interpolants for univariate functions that are well approximated by integer translates of the sinc function. Thus, in exact arithmetic, a large value of $c$ should be useful whenever the function is well approximated by the Whittaker cardinal series. However, we recall that the linear systems arising when $c$ is large can be rather ill-conditioned. Indeed, in Chapter 4 we proved that the smallest eigenvalue of the interpolation matrix generated by a finite regular grid converges to zero exponentially quickly as $c \rightarrow \infty$. We refer the reader to Table 4.1 for further information. Therefore special techniques are required for the effective use of large $c$.

## Conclusions

## 8 : Conclusions

There seems to be no interest in using non-Euclidean norms for radial basis functions at present, possibly because of the poor approximation properties of the $\ell^{1}$-norm $\|\cdot\|_{1}$ reported by several workers. Thus Chapter 2 does not seem to have any practical applications yet. However, it may be useful to use $p$-norms $(1<p<2)$, or functions of $p$-norms, when there is a known preferred direction in the underlying function, because radial basis functions based on the Euclidean norm can perform poorly in this context. On a purely theoretical note, we observe that the construction of Section 2.4 can be applied to any norm enjoying the symmetries of the cube.

The greatest weakness - and the greatest strength - of the norm estimates of Chapters 3-6 lies in their dependence on regular grids. However, we note that the upper bounds on norms of inverses apply to sets of centres which can be arbitrary subsets of a regular grid. In other words, contiguous subsets of grids are not required. Furthermore, we conjecture that a useful upper bound on the norm of the inverse generated by an arbitrary set of centres with minimal separation distance $\delta$ (that is $\left\|x_{j}-x_{k}\right\| \geq \delta>0$ if $j \neq k$ ) will be provided by the upper bound for the inverse generated by a regular grid of spacing $\delta$.

Probably the most important practical finding of this dissertation is that the number of steps required by the conjugate gradient algorithm can be independent of the number of centres for suitable preconditioners. We hope to discover preconditioners with this property for arbitrary sets of centres.

The choice of constant in the multiquadric is still being investigated (see, for instance, Kansa and Carlson (1992)). Because the approximation of band-limited functions is of some practical importance, our findings may be highly useful. In short, we suggest using as large a value of the constant as the condition number allows. Hence there is some irony in our earlier discovery that the condition number of the interpolation matrix can increase exponentially quickly as the constant increases.

Let us conclude with the remark that radial basis functions are extremely
rich mathematical objects, and there is much left to be discovered. It is our hope that the strands of research initiated in this thesis will enable some of these future discoveries.

## References

## References

Abramowitz, M., and I. A. Stegun (1970), Handbook of Mathematical Functions, Dover Publications (New York).

Ball, K. M. (1989), Invertibility of Euclidean distance matrices and radial basis interpolation, CAT report no. 201, Texas A \& M University, College Station.

Barrodale, I., M. Berkley and D. Skea (1992), "Warping digital images using thin plate splines", presented at the Sixth Texas International Symposium on Approximation Theory (Austin, January 1992).

Baxter, B. J. C. (1991a), "Conditionally positive functions and p-norm distance matrices", Constr. Approx. 7, pp. 427-440.

Baxter, B. J. C. (1991b), "Norm estimates for Toeplitz distance matrices", Report NA16, University of Cambridge.

Baxter, B. J. C. (1992a), "Norm estimates for inverses of distance matrices", in Mathematical Methods in Computer Aided Geometric Design, T. Lyche and L. L. Schumaker (eds.), Academic Press (New York), pp. 9-18.

Baxter, B. J. C. (1992b), "On the asymptotic cardinal function of the multiquadric $\varphi(r)=\left(r^{2}+c^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}$ as $c \rightarrow \infty \prime$. To appear in a special issue of An International Journal of Computers and Mathematics with Applications.

Baxter, B. J. C. (1992c), "Norm estimates and preconditioning for conjugate gradient solution of RBF linear systems". In preparation.

Baxter, B. J. C. and C. A. Micchelli, "Norm estimates for the $\ell^{2}$-inverses of multivariate Toeplitz matrices". In preparation.

Beatson, R. K. and G. N. Newsam (1992), "Fast evaluation of radial basis functions: 1". To appear in a special issue of An International Journal of Computers and Mathematics with Applications.
de Boor, C. (1987), "Multivariate approximation", in the The State of the Art in

Numerical Analysis, A. Iserles and M. J. D. Powell (eds.), Oxford University Press (Oxford), pp. 87-110.

Buhmann, M. D. (1990), "Multivariate cardinal interpolation with radial basis functions", Constr. Approx. 6, pp. 225-256.

Buhmann, M. D. and M. J. D. Powell (1990), "Radial basis function interpolation on an infinite regular grid", in Algorithms for Approximation II, J. C. Mason and M. G. Cox (eds.), Chapmann and Hall (London), pp. 146-169.

Buhmann, M. D. and N. Dyn (1991), "Error estimates for multiquadric interpolation", in Curves and Surfaces, P.-J. Laurent, A. Le Méhauté, and L. L. Schumaker (eds.), Academic Press (New York), pp. 51-58.

Buhmann, M. D. and C. A. Micchelli (1991), "Multiply monotone functions for cardinal interpolation", Advances in Applied Mathematics 12, pp. 358-386.

Chui, C. K. (1988), Multivariate Splines, SIAM Regional Conference Series in Applied Mathematics 54 (Philadelphia).

Chui, C. K. (1992), An Introduction to Wavelets, Academic Press (New York).
Davis, P. J. (1975), Interpolation and Approximation, Dover Publications (New York).

Dahmen, W. and C. A. Micchelli (1983), "Recent progress in multivariate splines", in Approximation Theory IV, C. K. Chui, L. L. Schumaker and J. D. Ward (eds), Academic Press (New York), pp. 27-121.

Duchon, J. (1975), "Fonctions-spline du type plaque mince en dimension 2", Technical Report 231, Université de Grenoble.

Duchon, J. (1976), "Fonctions-spline à energie invariante par rotation", Technical Report 27, Université de Grenoble.

Dyn, N., W. A. Light and E. W. Cheney (1989), "Interpolation by piecewise linear radial basis functions", J. Approx. Theory. 59, pp. 202-223.

Dyn, N., D. Levin and S. Rippa (1986), "Numerical procedures for surface fitting of scattered data by radial functions", SIAM J. Sci. Stat. Comput. 7, pp. 639-659.

Dyn, N., D. Levin and S. Rippa (1990), "Data dependent triangulations for piecewise linear interpolation", IMA J. of Numer. Anal. 10, pp. 137-154.

Edrei, A. (1953), "On the generating function of doubly infinite, totally positive sequences", Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. 74, pp. 367-383.

Fletcher, R. (1987), Practical Methods of Optimization, Wiley \& Sons (Chicester).

Franke, R. (1982), "Scattered data interpolation: tests of some methods", Math. of Comp. 38, pp. 181-200.

Franke, R. (1987), "Recent advances in the approximation of surfaces from scattered data", in Topics in Multivariate Approximation, C. K. Chui, L. L. Schumaker and F. I. Utreras (eds), Academic Press (New York), pp. 79-98.

Golub, G. H. and C. F. Van Loan (1989), Matrix Computations, The John Hopkins University Press (Baltimore).

Grenander, U. and G. Szegő (1984), Toeplitz Forms, Chelsea (New York).

Hardy, G. H., J. E. Littlewood and G. Pólya (1952), Inequalities, Cambridge University Press (Cambridge).

Hayes, J. G. (1987), "Fitting surfaces to data", in The Mathematics of Surfaces, R. R. Martin (ed.), Oxford University Press (Oxford), pp. 17-38.

Hille, E. (1962), Analytic Function Theory, Volume II, Ginn and Co. (Waltham, Massachusetts).

Jackson, I. R. H. (1988), Radial basis function methods for multivariable approximation, Ph.D. Dissertation, University of Cambridge.

Jones, D. S. (1982), The Theory of Generalised Functions, Cambridge University Press (Cambridge).

Kansa, E. J. and R. E. Carlson (1992), "Improved accuracy of multiquadric interpolation using variable shape parameters". To appear in a special issue of $A n$ International Journal of Computers and Mathematics with Applications.

Karlin, S. (1968), Total Positivity, Volume I, Stanford University Press (Stanford, California).

Katznelson, Y. (1976), An Introduction to Harmonic Analysis, Dover Publications (New York).

Light, W. A. and E. W. Cheney (1986), Approximation Theory in Tensor Product Spaces, Lecture Notes in Mathematics 1169, Springer Verlag (Berlin).

Madych, W. R. (1990), "Polyharmonic splines, multivariate analysis and entire functions", International Series of Numerical Analysis 94, pp. 205-216.

Madych, W. R. and S. A. Nelson (1990), "Polyharmonic cardinal splines", J. Approx. Theory 60, pp. 141-156.

Micchelli, C. A. (1986), "Interpolation of scattered data: distance matrices and conditionally positive functions", Constr. Approx. 2, pp. 11-22.

Narcowich, F. J. and J. D. Ward (1990), "Norm estimates for inverses of scattered data interpolation matrices associated with completely monotonic functions", preprint.

Narcowich, F. J. and J. D. Ward (1991), "Norms of inverses and condition numbers of matrices associated with scattered data", J. Approx. Theory 64, pp. 69-94.
von Neumann, J. and I. J. Schoenberg (1941), "Fourier integrals and metric geometry", Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. 50, pp. 226-251.

Powell, M. J. D. (1981), Approximation Theory and Methods, Cambridge University Press (Cambridge).

Powell, M. J. D. (1991), "Univariate multiquadric interpolation: some recent results", in Curves and Surfaces, P.-J. Laurent, A. Le Méhauté, and L. L. Schumaker
(eds.), Academic Press (New York), pp. 371-381.

Powell, M. J. D. Powell (1992), "The theory of radial basis function approximatin in 1990", in Advances in Numerical Analysis II: Wavelets, Subdivision Algorithms and Radial Functions, ed. W. A. Light, Oxford University Press (Oxford), pp. 105-210.

Rudin, W. (1973), Functional Analysis, McGraw Hill (London).

Schoenberg, I. J. (1935), "Remarks to Maurice Fréchet's article 'Sur la definition d'une classe d'espace distanciés vectoriellement applicable sur l'espace d'Hilbert.' ", Ann. of Math. 36, pp. 724-732.

Schoenberg, I. J. (1937), "On certain metric spaces arising from Euclidean space by a change of metric and their embedding in Hilbert space", Ann. of Math. 38, pp. 787-793.

Schoenberg, I. J. (1938), "Metric spaces and completely monotone functions", Ann. of Math. 39, pp. 811-841.

Schoenberg, I. J. (1951), "On Pólya frequency functions. I. The totally positive functions and their Laplace transforms," J. Analyse Math. 1, pp. 331-374.

Schoenberg, I. J. (1973), Cardinal Spline Interpolation, SIAM Regional Conference Series in Applied Mathematics 12 (Philadelphia).

Schwartz, L. (1966), Théorie des Distributions, Hermann (Paris).
Stein, E. M. and G. Weiss (1971), Introduction to Fourier analysis on Euclidean spaces, Princeton Univ. Press (Princeton, New Jersey).

Sun, X. (1990), "Norm estimates for inverses of Euclidean distance matrices", preprint.

Whittaker, E. T. and G. N. Watson (1927), A Course of Modern Analysis, Cambridge University Press (Cambridge).

Wilkinson, J. H. (1965), The Algebraic Eigenvalue Problem, Oxford University

## References

Press (Oxford).

Zygmund, A. (1979), Trigonometric Series, Volumes I and II, Cambridge University Press (Cambridge).

